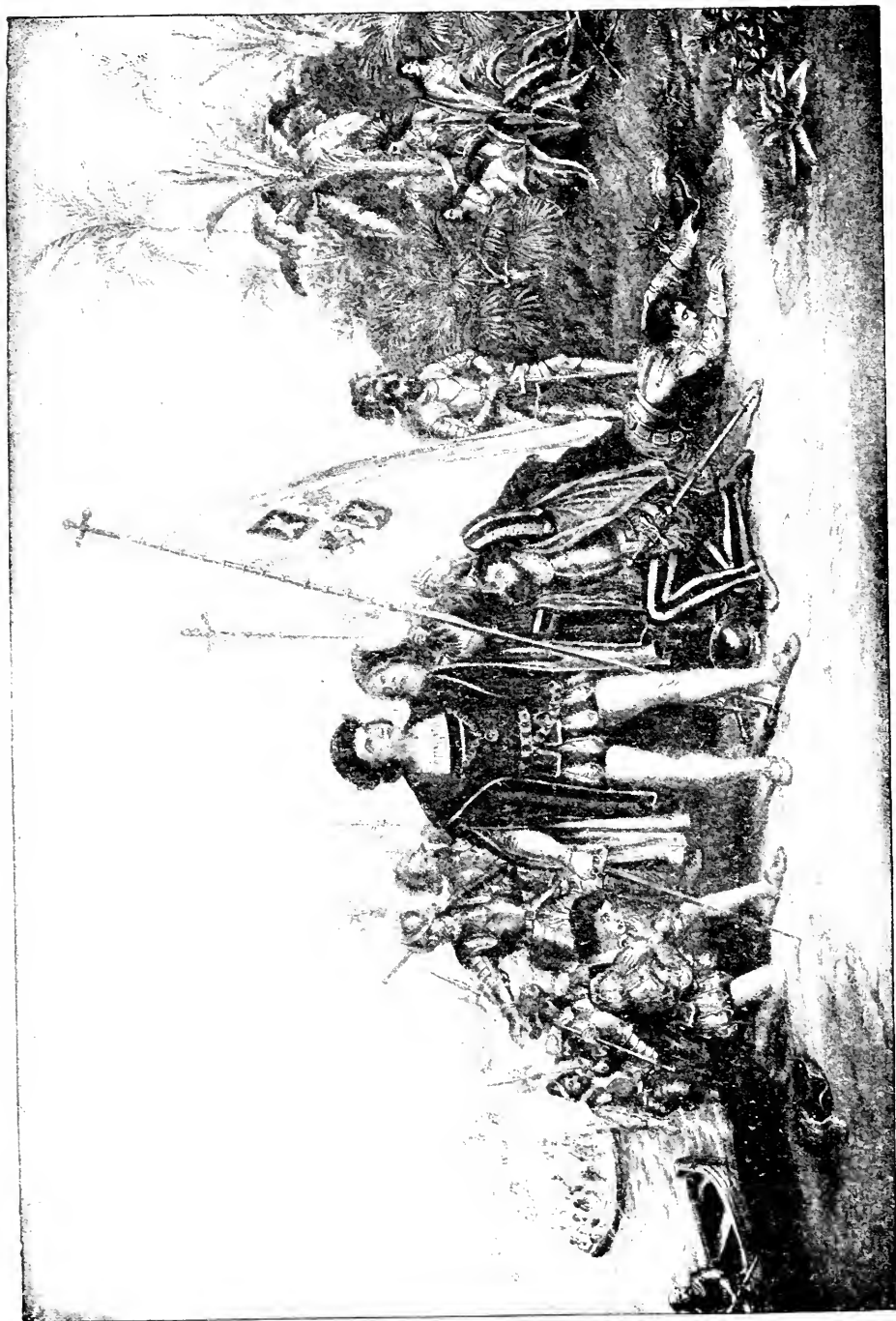




CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS.



LANDING OF COLUMBUS

HISTORIC AND PICTURESQUE

EXPLORATION, DISCOVERY *and* CONQUEST
OF
THE NEW WORLD

CONTAINING

THE THRILLING ADVENTURES

OF

CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS, AMERICUS VESPUCIUS,
JOHN AND SEBASTIAN CABOT, ETC.

DESCRIBING THEIR VOYAGES IN UNKNOWN SEAS, ENCOUNTERS
WITH TERRIBLE STORMS AND SHIPWRECKS, DISCOVERY OF
STRANGE LANDS, CURIOUS PEOPLE AND RICH MINES ; THEIR
DESPERATE COMBATS WITH SAVAGES AND WILD BEASTS,
STRUGGLES WITH MUTINOUS CREWS, WANDERINGS
IN SWAMPS AND FORESTS, UNVEILING THE
GLORIES OF THE NEW WORLD TO THE
ASTONISHED GAZE OF ALL NATIONS, ETC.

By D. M. KELSEY

The Well-known Historian

Author of "Pioneer Heroes," "Stanley and the White Heroes in Africa," Etc.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION


BY HON. MURAT HALSTEAD

Most Renowned Journalist and Columbian Student

Embellished with a Great Many Historical Illustrations by
the Best English and American Artists.

ENTERED ACCORDING TO ACT OF CONGRESS IN THE YEAR 1910, BY
GEO. W. BERTRON
THE OFFICE OF THE LIBRARIAN OF CONGRESS, AT WASHINGTON, D. C., 11

PREFACE.

F all studies, that of History is one of the most important and interesting. It satisfies a natural and laudable curiosity as to what has taken place in the world, and makes some amends for the shortness of life by enabling us to live over, in thought, the days and scenes of the past, and to know, as by a second experience, the life and labors of those who have gone before us.

So strong and universal is the desire to know about the times that are gone, as to their persons, events and progressive changes, that it may almost be called an instinct of the soul. And as Cicero says: "Not to know what has taken place in former times is to be always a child, for if no use is made of the labors of by-gone ages, the world must always remain in the infancy of knowledge."

In the following pages it has been the aim of the writer to give a history of the discovery and earliest explorations of the New World. In these biographies, as found in the original form, there is much that is of little interest to the general reader; and much of scientific importance, that is difficult to understand by those who have not a close acquaintance with the mysteries of seamanship and astronomical observation. All these points have been condensed and written in such familiar language that no difficulty will be experienced, even by boys and girls who might otherwise be repelled by the appearance of difficulty.

The original authorities have been consulted wherever practicable. A constant effort has been made to retain as much individual interest as possible; and reference to the authorities from which this work has been gathered would only encumber the book without adding to its value; for in many cases the materials for a single chapter have been collected from many and various sources, and woven laboriously into a single whole.

R



INTRODUCTION.

THE first chapter of this volume is a charming compilation of the legends of the discoveries of North America before the famous voyage of Columbus, in which the trade winds wafted his ships to the West Indies. The testimony seems so clear that it would be eccentric to declare strenuously against the conclusion upon circumstantial evidence, that the Northmen repeatedly visited Greenland and were acquainted with Newfoundland, Nantucket, Long Island, and perhaps Rhode Island.

There are traditions in Iceland that corroborate the legendary stories of the adventurous Northmen, and they add that Columbus visited Iceland fourteen years before he immortalized himself as the discoverer of the "new world." It is a part of the story of Columbus in Iceland that he became intimately acquainted with the antique lore of that American island. It is worth while to remember that the westward capes of Iceland are less than three hundred miles from Greenland, while the eastern capes are between nine hundred and a thousand miles from Norway.

It is a plain proposition that in the course of the centuries the capital of Iceland was settled in 874. The writer visited that island one thousand years later, with Cyrus Field, Dr. I. I. Hayes, Bayard Taylor, Professors Magnusson and Kneeland and Mr. Henry Gladstone, who imported a pony to Hawarden. The founding of the city was five hundred and eighteen years before the Columbus discovery. If it be true that Columbus visited Iceland fourteen years before he found the West Indies—the year of his visit was 1478 and Reykjavæek had then been founded more than five hundred years, within easy sail in three or four days of Greenland. The people were largely competent navigators with sea-going craft, and the land westward could not have been unfamiliar to them.

There was nothing strange or doubtful in using a fact made known freely that there was land in the West. It does not reduce the splendor of the achievement of Columbus that he heard the story. He made use of it. He found in the presence of land in the West a corroboration of his dreams, that gave a footing to his fancy.

The Icelandic tradition is that a Bishop was maintained for a long time in Iceland, and that a gorge of ice massed on the coast that lasted forty years, and then there was only desolate silence.

After the "Decline and Fall" of the Roman Empire, Northern Italy was celebrated for commercial supremacy, glories in art and cities of special splendors and power; and for immortal authors, artists in literature, sculpture, architecture and painting. Rome remained when the Empire crumbled into mighty fragments, "The Eternal City;" and though there was an Eastern Empire and a rival capital—Constantinople—to divide the immense inheritance, the swarms of Asiatic conquerors came after the capture of the Oriental metropolis and converted the magnificent dominant church, St. Sophia, into a veritable and memorable mosque—a citadel of Mohammed in Christendom; and the myriads of Mohammedans seeking Paradise swept over Southern Spain, first baffled at Vienna and at last beaten on the central plains of France, at Chalons.

Unlike Alexander, when his legions marched to India and he grew weary of conquest and carousal, Rome encountered other unconquered worlds, and found material occupation in crusades and cathedrals and the marvelous organizations of the then new, now old Church of Rome.

Naples survived the eruptions of Vesuvius, and the irruption of the barbarians from the heart of Europe, remained the Queen City of the Italian South, when Carthage, like Tyre, was buried in her own ruins. Rome and Greece, however, taught the new nations rising on the wings of stately ships, over the antiquities of Egypt, to open the road to India; and opulent tradesmen, guided by those who lived in the shadows of the Alps, the lagoons of the Adriatic, the pleasant river Arno and the shores of the bright central waters of the Mediterranean, gave the sunny historic lands a larger life.

When Rome was no longer the imperial throne of the world, the

camels, called cleverly the "ships of the deserts" in Africa, gave way to the fleets that represented world-wide sea powers, and gathered the golden harvest between the ends of the earth.

The representative and commanding cities of the revival of civilization, when the sword of old Rome ceased to devour, and the later and fairer forms of progress became manifest, were four—Venice, Genoa, Pisa and Florence. Venice, the bride of the sea, was first in the illustrious capitals that became nations. Florence lacked the embrace of the sea to inspire her to be the home of wide dominion, and became the glorious city of the Beautiful, the star of the Appenines.

Pisa was the rival of Genoa, as Genoa of Venice; but was long lived and strong enough to be of the leaders of the Crusaders, and carried home from Palestine forty ship loads of the precious hills around Jerusalem, to heap her Campo Santo with sacred soil, and to this end disfigured, with the scars of excavation the landscapes overlooking Solomon's temple, the scene of the Cross of Christ; and the sepulchre from the door of which the stone rolled away.

When we remember the fleet of Pisa, laden with soil touched by the Saviour's feet to make holy a graveyard in Italy, we meet the thought that after all a higher intelligence could declare that skepticism of the "relics" ridiculed by unbelievers in mysteries, might reasonably be relaxed, in view of the stranger things we know have happened; and that, as we see in these days, miracles of science we need not deny the existence of memorials of Christianity though obscured in detail by savagery in the gloom of the desolation that overtook the conquests, won in the sign of the cross, when the sword and torch of Mohammed prevailed and gave the memorials of Christians to graves and dust heaps. The Crusaders, the Greek Emperors, and the stately Italian cities, gathered a harvest with their armies of historical relics in the Holy Lands.

Christopher Columbus is not believed by the people of Genoa to have been born in that city. The testimony, so far as we may use the word, where enlightenment compels the existence of uncertainty, is that the great navigator was born in a village on the shores of the Gulf of Genoa, north of the city and near the sea, in the midst of quarries that yielded red stone.

The exact location of the house that is loosely called the birthplace of Columbus, is not known, but there is interesting truth. There is evidence that a house identified with the Columbus family was the property of his father, and the home of the child who gave the name distinction. The house bears marks, not recent, that it has been changed since the boy Christopher was of the humble home household. It has been duly photographed, after the examination of records, proving it the habitation of the Columbus family. It is on the south side of a steep and narrow street, running from the harbor to the hills. On one side, when the writer found it, was a wine shop, and on the other a tobacco shop.

The present appearances are that the original house has been reconstructed, so far as the front is concerned, into two houses. The one the father of Columbus, the discoverer, lived in, is that on the left of the building as presented in engravings. The form of the windows, and the narrowness of each of the structures as they stand invite this theory. Legal documents exist proving the Columbus folk lived in this place for several generations, including the time of the birth of the man child of high destiny.

There is a photograph of the house taken by an American consul, who investigated the neighborhood and also the official pigeon holes that seemed to speak of the receptacles of many secrets; but the only fact discovered was that the "house of Columbus" was the property and home of the people of which, in that place, Christopher Columbus was one of the children, and that it was for several generations the dwelling place of those who derived title from the navigator's father. There was not, in or near the grim place, a good play ground for the youngsters, and it has the appearance of a promise that it will remain unchanged for the centuries to come, as during like periods in the past.

When Columbus made the discovery identified with his name, the spirit of adventure was abroad in the world, and the art of navigation improving so rapidly that evidently the appointed time was close at hand, for the revelation of the gigantic continents connected by a narrow but rugged isthmus, awaiting explorers to be announced as the new world.

Clearly, Columbus was a man of extraordinary breadth of information and strength of character. He had deep convictions that there was land in the West. He knew substantially the shape of the world, the fact that it sloped off toward the poles, and that the farther North one sailed, the narrower were the seas measured East and West, and the longer and colder the winters grew. He knew the Atlantic ocean broadened southward, and had read of the far East of Asia. Cipango and Cathay were Japan and China.

The travels and writings of them by Marco Polo, kindled the imagination of the hardy Genoese sailor, destined to the delivery of the stroke of an enchanter's wand, that prepared the way for other and broader discoveries, among them the realization of the magnitude of the globe.

Dreamer that he was, Columbus never dreamed that the earth was great as appeared when the impulse given by his voyages led in a few years comparatively to the completion of circumnavigation of the globe. The first ship that sailed around the earth was that carrying the flag of Magellan's squadron. The ship returned, the last of the fleet, with its captain, but the commander in chief of the squadron was slain in attempting to conquer a beautiful island of the subsequently named Phillippine archipelago. He fought to force the inhabitants to become the subjects of a Christian king, and was killed in the fight.

When the flag ship arrived on the return to Africa, through the straits of Magellan, a day had been lost in the reckoning, but the demonstration was made that the world was round.

Columbus had letters for the Mikado of the age, the Great Kahn imperial house of Japan had then been in power more than two thousand years. The enormous error had been made by the Genoese navigator that the island of Cuba was Cipango. He sent forth messengers with letters of introduction to the sovereign of Japan, and they discovered a people of nakedness and innocence, smoking a strange herb they called "tabac."

The discoverer followed the coast of Cuba in two of his voyages, until convinced he had struck the mainland of Asia. On his last voyage, he saw the coast of South America, but did not land. In

his calculations, believing the globe was round like an egg, he had omitted the Americas and the Pacific ocean. If he had lived to ascertain the bulk of the world, he would have been amazed at the prodigality of nature, in manufacturing worlds made of meteors.

The West Indies, as the islands were named, Columbus actually discovered, turned out richer in natural resources than those of the East. It was the fortune of the navigator to have a spell of fair weather assigned him in the discovery of a far greater land than India, an island surpassing Cipango, in extent, fruitfulness and beauty, if we may count the unlimited ages, to find a bigger and more bountiful Cathay in Asia.

The letters of the discoverer in describing his islands are poems in fact, and glow with the rapture of a wonderful achievement. They are beautiful in poetry and piety, penetrated with a deep sense of duty to Christianity, with devotion to his Church, and he was radiant in his writings about the incomparable loveliness that environed him—the colors of the fish in the rivers rivaling the bloom of the wilderness that was a majestic and opulent orchard of fruit trees. There was waiting for him, as he beheld the dazzling landscapes disclosed, an awful enemy native to the voluptuous airs, destined to destroy navies, compared with which his caravels were as fishing boats, built to keep within view of hospitable shores.

Columbus arrived in the West Indies in the cyclone season. The month of October in that clime especially experiences the terrible tempests that wreck the forests and rend the cities. It is the month of “the hurricane’s eclipse of the sun.” The discoverer lingered in the enchanted air, hurricane haunted, hoping to find Cipango, until he reluctantly departed from his own Paradise. There was peace while he waited. Everywhere he found surpassing beauties of sea and sky and shore.

All the blandishments of the tropics were spread to banquet his senses to indulge the fascination of suspense and the fancies he painted of the coming time. The mighty whirlwinds that begin as bubbles of the languid atmosphere of the American Mediterranean and send forth their tornadoes like thunderbolts northward and northwestward, were stilled that sober October; but storms overtook and

nearly overwhelmed the Conquering Hero, when, on the waters the trade winds had beguiled him westward. Despairing at last of escaping from the aroused Atlantic, he wrote a brief story of his "find" in the West, placed the parchment in a cake of wax, and the wax in a keg, and so fixed the scroll to float when his ship went down.

There was a change from stormy to fair, and he returned to Spain to receive great honors, and slights, jealousies and treacheries, through which he endured labor and sorrow to the end of his life, and died to be four times buried—in San Domingo once, Cuba once, and Spain first and last. Counting his crossing the Atlantic living and dead, his voyages over that stormy sea, from side to side, were ten. His longest repose was in the cathedral of Havana, where he had an unfinished monument, like "an empty glass turned down," as Spain lost her last island that Colou found for Isabella and Ferdinand.

A handwritten signature in black ink, reading "Murat Halsted". The signature is written in a cursive style with a large, sweeping initial 'M' and a long, horizontal flourish extending to the right.

CONTENTS.

AMERICA BEFORE COLUMBUS.

Plan of Work—Divisions of History—Egyptian Knowledge of America—Other Legends—Carthaginian Discoveries—Records Found—A Grecian Tomb in America—Similarity of Picture Writing—Chinese Discoveries—Difficulties of Maritime Enterprises—Invention of the Compass—Irish Claims—The Welsh Discovery—Welsh-Speaking Indians—The Norsemen—Erik the Red—Discovery of Greenland—The Mainland—Leif's Voyage—The Round Tower—Vinland—The First Fight with the Indians—The First White Native American—The Dighton Rock—The Skeleton in Armor. 25

COLUMBUS' LIFE BEFORE THE DISCOVERY OF AMERICA.

Date and Place of His Birth—A Poor Man's Son—Education—Geographical Knowledge of the Time—Ideas of India—Marco Polo—A Splendid Banquet—The Scoffers Rebuked—"Lord Millions"—The Story of his Travels—The Grand Khan—Cipango—Imprisoned at Genoa—Influence on Youths of Genoa—Columbus Sees Service—Deceiving a Mutinous Crew—Prince Henry of Portugal—Columbus at Lisbon—Marriage—An Honored Profession—Friends—Evidence of a World Beyond the Waters—Growth of his Great Idea—Toscanelli Consulted—Religious Character of Columbus—Application to Genoa—To Venice—Voyage to Iceland—Application to Portugal—A Scurvy Trick—Condition of European Countries—A Friend at Last—Disappointment—A Sketch of Spanish History—The War Against the Moors—Effect upon the Project of Columbus—Friends at Court—Received by King Ferdinand—The Great Council of Salamanca—The Folly of the Wise—The Arguments of Columbus—Delayed Decision—A Wandering Court—Invitation to Portugal—Letter from England—Religious Ardor Strengthened—The Council's Decision—Columbus Sets Out for France—At the Convent Gate—Friends at Palos—Appeal to the Queen—Demands of Columbus Rejected—A Courageous Courtier—Columbus Recalled—Isabella's Independence—Articles of Agreement. 40

THE FIRST VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

New Difficulties—Reluctant Seamen—The Three Vessels—A Town of Mourning—Sets Sail from Palos—Alarms—The Double Reckoning—Variation of the Compass—The Grassy Sea—Renewed Doubts—Indications of Land—Mutiny of the Crew—Hope Renewed—Confidence in Columbus—Night-Watch of the Admiral—Light through the Darkness—"LAND!"—The Landing of the Discoverer—Taking Possession—The Natives—Cruising—Self-Deception—Exploration of Cuba—Two Wonderful Plants—Desertion of the *Pinta*—Hayti Discovered—Visits from Native Chiefs—Guacanagari—The *Santa Maria* Wrecked—Assisted by Natives—Tribute of Columbus to their Character—The Indians' First Acquaintance with Fire-Arms—

Envable Indians—Colony Projected—Efforts to Convert the Indians—Building the Fortress—Instructions to Colonists—Departure of Columbus—Rejoined by the *Pinta*—Explanations—Armed Natives—Hostilities—Difficulties of Return Voyage—Storms—Piety of the Crew—Causes of the Admiral's Distress—His Precautions—Land Once More—Enmity of Portuguese—Liberated Prisoners—Departure—Storms Again—Off the Coast of Portugal—Reception in Portugal—The King's Advisers—Rejoicing at Palos—Arrival of the *Pinta*—Pinzon's Treachery—His Death—Reception of Columbus at Court—Unparalleled Honors—Royal Thanksgiving—Jealousy of Courtiers—Columbus and the Egg—The Papal Bull—Preparations for a Second Voyage—Various Arrangements—The Golden Prime of Columbus. 79

THE SECOND VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

The Great Fleet—Precautions of Columbus—The Outward Voyage—Traces of Civilization—Evidences of Cannibalism—Hostilities—Doubts Confirmed—At Anchorage—The Fate of the Garrison—Story of the Natives—Attacked by Caribs—A New Colony—The Building of Isabella—Sickness—Exploration of the Island—Ojeda's Expedition—Return of Vessels—Slave-Trading Proposed by Columbus—His Reasons—Dissatisfaction—A Conspiracy Discovered—Action of Columbus—Columbus Explores the Island—Fort St. Thomas—Necessities of the Colony—"Gentlemen" at Work—A Voyage of Discovery—Welcome Reports—Cuba Voted a Part of the Mainland—Dangerous Illness of Columbus—Return to Isabella—Adventures of Bartholomew Columbus—Margarite's Rebellion—Enemies—Siege of St. Thomas—Ojeda's Daring Enterprise—Spanish Cunning vs. Indian Cunning—Steel Bracelets—Spanish Cunning Wins—Condition of Colony—An Indian War—Victory—The Conqueror's Conditions—A Desperate Effort—Misrepresentations of Margarite—Isabella's Views on Slavery—Aguado's Arrival—Wariness of Columbus—Discovery of Gold-Mines—Romantic Story—Return to Spain. 128

THE LAST VOYAGES OF COLUMBUS.

Arrival at Cadiz—Reception at Court—"Gold in Bars"—A Miserable Maker of Jokes—A Thoughtful Queen—Third Voyage of Columbus—Departure from Spain—La Trinidad—The Continent Discovered—The Land of Pearls—The Earthly Paradise—Building of San Domingo—The Adelantado's Administration—Conspiracy of Indians—Roldan's Rebellion—Dangers of the Government—Indian Insurrection—Guarionex Captured—Roldan's Luck—Terms Made with the Rebels—Enemies of Columbus in Spain—His Sons Shamed—Official Action—Bobadilla in Hispaniola—His Course—Uncertainty of Columbus—Return to San Domingo—Columbus in Chains—His Brothers Arrested—The "Reward of Services"—Embarkation of Columbus—Arrival in Spain—Bobadilla's Action Disavowed—Ferdinand's Jealousy and Distrust—Ovando Appointed Governor—Wrongs of the Indians—A Great Fleet—Columbus Plans a Crusade—Ferdinand's Substitute—Fourth Voyage of Columbus—Sails from Spain—Ovando Refuses Shelter—His Ships—The Predicted Storm—Results—Cruising—Adventures on Land—A Daring Messenger—Reaches Jamaica—Courage of Mendez—Anxiety of the Castaways—Mutiny of Porras—Columbus Predicts an Eclipse—Terror of the Natives—An Insolent Messenger—The Mutiny Ended—Assistance Arrives—Columbus Reaches Spain—Death of Isabella—Illness of Columbus—Assistance of Vespucci—Ferdinand's Delay—A Compromise Proposed—Rejection—A Last Gleam of Hope—Death of Columbus—His Burial—Ceremonies attending the Removal to Havana. 155

AMERICUS VESPUCCI.

Is "America" an Indian Word?—A City of Merchants—The Vespucci Family—Education—A Family Misfortune—Americus in Spain—Connection with Columbus—First Voyage of Vespucci—South America Discovered—An American Venice—Attacked by Natives—An

Inland Visit—Friendly Natives—Repairing the Vessels—A Mission of Vengeance—A Desperate Conflict—Return to Spain—Disputes about the Voyages of Vespucci—Marriage—Visit to Court—Ojeda's Expedition—Second Voyage of Vespucci—Off the Coast of South America—Gentle Cannibals—Landing of the Spaniards Disputed—A Village of Giants—A Filthy Habit—Return to Spain—A Flattering Offer—His Third Voyage—A Stormy Passage—Land at Last—An Earthly Paradise—An Invitation Accepted—Murdered by Cannibals—Revenge Forbidden—Vespucci becomes Commander—Off the Coast of Africa—Return to Portugal—The Fourth Voyage of Vespucci—Misfortunes—An Anxious Condition—South America Again—A Colony Planted—Return to Lisbon—To Spain—Preparations for New Expedition—Causes of Delay—New Tasks Proposed—Appointed Chief Pilot of Spain—Visits Florence—His Death—His Family—Foundations of his Fame—Accusations—Original Application of the Name America. 196

SEBASTIAN CABOT, THE DISCOVERER OF NORTH AMERICA.

John Cabot—Settles in England—His Sons—Residence in Venice—Return to England—The Cabot Boys' Interest in Columbus—Henry VII.—John Cabot Goes to Court—A Patent Granted—Expedition Sails from England—Touches at Iceland—Nova Scotia Discovered—The Sailors Insist on Returning—A Second Venture—Death of John Cabot—A Colony Proposed—Mutinous Sailors—Exploration—A King's Injustice—In Spain—Henry VIII.—Sebastian Cabot Summoned to England—To Spain Again—Grand Pilot—A Disappointment—Return to England—Voyage to America—Rebellious Followers—Summoned to Spain Again—Importance of the Moluccas—An Expedition Thither—Sealed Orders—Fault-Finding—Swift Retribution—La Plata—A Fort Built—Ascending the River—A Bloody Battle—Tracked Across the Ocean—A Polite Refusal—Pursued up the River—Cabot Defends Himself—Explorations—Innocent and Guilty Confused—The Fort Stormed—Return to Spain—Cabot's Reputation—Return to England—Grand Pilot of England—Variation of the Needle Explained by Cabot—Proposed Expedition to the Northeast—The Stilyard—Sir Hugh Willoughby—Chancellor's Success—Willoughby's Death—Cabot's Commercial Importance—Accession and Marriage of Queen Mary—Cabot Resigns his Pension—A Lively Old Man—Pension Renewed—Worthington's Unfaithfulness—Death of Cabot. 227

ILLUSTRATIONS.

	PAGE.
English and Spanish Contending for Supremacy in the New World.	Full Page iv
Christopher Columbus.	Full Page v
Columbus Before Isabella and the Council.	Full Page vi
A Phœnician Vessel.	27
A Fleet of Roman Galleys in the Mediterranean.	28
Discovery of Greenland by Norse Ships.	32
Round Tower at Newport, Rhode Island.	35
Lief and His Men Find Tyrker.	36
The Skeleton in Armor.	38
Birthplace of Columbus.	Full Page 40
Sea Bishop and Mermaids.	43
The Phantoms of Fear.	44
Marco Polo at the Court of Kublai Khan.	47
Marco Polo's Single Galley Attacked by Seventy from Genoa.	Full Page 48
The Years of Preparation.	51
Diaz on His Way to the Cape.	53
Isabella in Armor.	Full Page 63
Columbus in the Royal Presence.	65
Columbus Before the Council.	Full Page 66
Columbus and His Son at the Monastery Gate.	Full Page 72
Departure of Columbus from Palos, Spain.	Full Page 78
"Land! Land!"	Full Page 82
The Mutiny.	86
Columbus Watching for Land.	Full Page 88
Columbus Approaching San Salvador.	Full Page 90
Landing of Columbus at San Salvador.	Full Page 92
The Fight with the Iguana.	97
The Grateful Cacique.	100
The Columbus Bronze Doors in the Capitol at Washington.	Full Page 105
The Return of Columbus.	109
Columbus' Men Throwing Over the Casks.	111
A Pilgrimage of Grace.	114
Columbus Before the Sovereigns of Portugal.	117
The Triumphant Progress.	Full Page 120
Reception of Columbus by Ferdinand and Isabella.	Full Page 122
Columbus and the Egg.	Full Page 124
Columbus Relating His Discoveries to His Friend, Father Perez.	126
Evidences of Cannibalism.	130
Sailing Among the Islands.	Full Page 137
Bartholomew Columbus.	144
Spaniards Setting Dogs on Indians.	150
An Aboriginal Race Working in Mines.	Full Page 153
Columbus Protecting the Indian Prisoners.	Full Page 156
"Gold in Bars".	158

	PAGE.
The Landing of Columbus at Trinidad.	160
The Tidal Wave.	161
Ruins of the House of Columbus at San Domingo.	165
Riveting the Fetters upon Columbus.	171
Columbus Returning to Spain in Chains.	Full Page 174
Hooted by the Mob.	175
Ovando's Fleet Shattered in a Storm.	178
Columbus' Caravels Aground.	185
Columbus and the Eclipse.	188
Death of Columbus.	Full Page 192
Statue of Columbus on the Portico of the Capitol at Washington.	195
Americus Vespuceius.	197
Vespuceius Exploring the New Country.	203
Natives of the Amazon.	206
On the Orinoco.	208
Lisbon in the Sixteenth Century.	216
Shipwrecked.	Full Page 218
John Cabot.	Full Page 226
Sebastian Cabot.	230
Cabot at Labrador.	Full Page 232
Cabot's Return to England.	234
Voyaging up the River.	245
Great Ship of Henry the Eighth.	250
Sebastian Cabot and the Cosmographers.	254

EXPLORATION, DISCOVERY AND CONQUEST.

CHAPTER I.

AMERICA BEFORE COLUMBUS.

Plan of the Work—Divisions of History—Egyptian Knowledge of America—Other Legends—Carthaginian Discoveries—Records Found—A Grecian Tomb in America—Similarity of Picture Writing—Chinese Discoveries—Difficulties of Maritime Enterprises—Invention of the Compass—Welsh-Speaking Indians—The Norsemen—Erik the Red—Discovery of Greenland—Leif's Voyage—The Round Tower—The First Fight with the Indians.

IT is our purpose in this volume to trace the history of the great discoveries beginning in the memorable year 1492; to show how not only Columbus labored and waited until his great opportunity came, but the adventures and hardships through which his contemporaries and successors sought out the mysteries surrounding that New World.

Before entering upon this task, however, it will be well to consider the stories told of various seamen who had sought and found the far-off continent, before Columbus. We shall also see what dim knowledge of a land beyond the great western ocean was current among the peoples of antiquity.

History is usually divided into three parts. Ancient history ends with the fall of Rome, in 476 A.D.; the History of the Middle Ages then begins, and extends over a period of about ten centuries; since the end of which, the record is called Modern History. During the first period, there were certain traditions regarding a country which was probably America; during the second period there may have been some daring sailors who reached the New World; the third period begins with the story of exploration, discovery and settlement in America.

Solon, one of the seven wise men of Greece, who lived in the sixth and seventh centuries B.C., traveled into far countries, to learn all that the sages of other nations had to teach. When he reached Egypt, he thought to astonish the priests—the learned men of the country—by telling them of the history of Greece, and particularly of Athens, of which city he was a native.

"Solon, Solon!" exclaimed one of the oldest of them; "the Greeks are nothing but children, and an aged Greek there is none."

Much surprised at this, the traveler asked the priest what he meant; and received in reply such an account of the knowledge which the Egyptians possessed of other peoples, as to make him accept for truth what had seemed but an idle boast.

Among other things, the old priest told him of a vast island, or rather continent, which once lay in the great ocean, to the west of Europe, and which was reached by a short voyage after the sailor had passed the Pillars of Hercules, as the Strait of Gibraltar was then called. The people of this continent had often made war upon those of Europe, and had been much dreaded by them; but a series of earthquakes, volcanic eruptions, and similar calamities, had caused this great island to sink into the waters of the ocean, with all its vast hordes of inhabitants; and the peoples of Europe had thus been saved from these terrible enemies. The sinking of this island, the priest added, had so blocked up the ocean with mud as to make it forever afterward impassable. The date of its destruction he fixed at a point about nine thousand years before his own time.

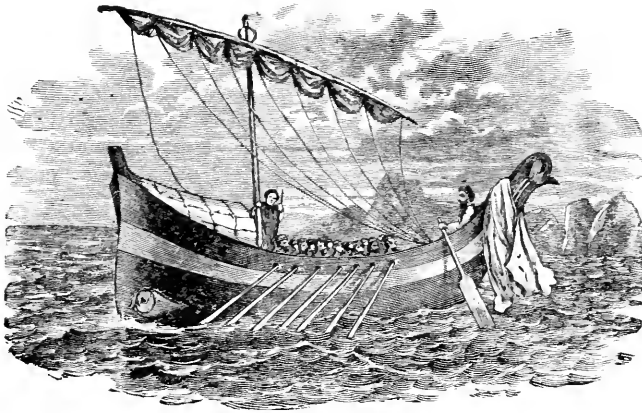
Solon returned to Greece, bearing this information with him; but it does not seem to have been made public until the time of his descendant Plato, who lived about two hundred years later; and we have no means of knowing how much Plato added to the original story from the treasury of his own mind. It is from this source that we derive the classic fables of the Lost Atlantis.

There were legends, too, of the Gardens of the Hesperides, and of the Fortunate Islands, and, later, of St. Brandan's Island and other favored places, far in the west; but whether these had any connection with a belief in land beyond the Atlantic, or whether this was simply considered a convenient situation for the scene of such stories, since nobody knew enough of this region to say the islands were not there, we cannot pretend to say.

It is possible that America was reached by the Phœnician and Carthaginian sailors, the most adventurous of antiquity. But the Phœnicians were early reduced to insignificance among the nations of the world, while the Carthaginians, whose city they had founded, rose into importance. But Carthage engaged in wars with Rome, and was finally wholly destroyed by the armies of that great city; and all record of her colonies and discoveries was thus lost. It is certain that Carthaginian sailors discovered the Canary Islands, which were then uninhabited; and these islands were peopled from Carthage; yet, when they were re-discovered, the inhabitants had lost all tradition of their ancestors having come from another country, and thought themselves the only people in the world.

Traditions which have survived the destruction of Carthage tell us that a vessel on the Mediterranean, which was sailing towards the Straits of Gibraltar, the ancient Calpe, was driven by storms beyond it, and was heard of

no more. Did it reach America? At a meeting of the Mexican Geographical Society, some few years since, it was stated that some brass tablets had been discovered in the northern part of Brazil, covered with Phœnician inscriptions, which tell of the discovery of America five centuries before the beginning of the Christian era. These are now in the museum at Rio Janeiro. They state that a Sidonian fleet sailed from a harbor in the Red Sea, and rounding the Cape of Good Hope, was driven by the south-east trade-winds, and then by the north-east, across the Atlantic. The number of the vessels, the number of seamen, and many other particulars are there given.



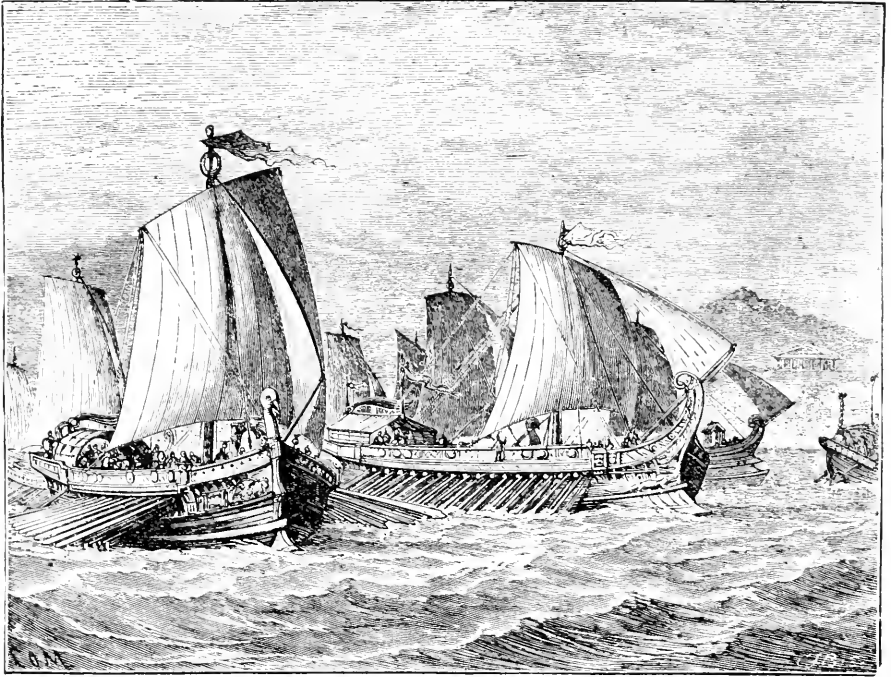
A PHœNICIAN VESSEL.

In 1827, a farmer near Montevideo, in Uruguay, South America, is said to have discovered a flat stone which bore an inscription in a language unknown to him. Beneath it was a vault of masonry, in which was deposited two ancient swords, a helmet, and a shield. The stone which had covered the vault was taken to Montevideo, where it was found that the inscription was in most parts sufficiently legible to be deciphered. According to those learned men who examined it, it was in Greek, and read as follows:—

“During the dominion of Alexander, the son of Philip, King of Macedon, in the sixty-third Olympiad, Ptolemais.”

On the handle of one of the swords was a man's portrait, supposed to be that of Alexander; the helmet was decorated with a fine sculpture representing Achilles dragging the body of Hector around the walls of Troy. If this is indeed a relic of times before Columbus, it would indicate that during the reign of Alexander the Great, about 330 B. C., a party of Greeks had crossed the Atlantic. Why the arms should have been deposited in this vault we do not know; it may have been that one of their number, Ptolemais, possibly their leader, died; it may be that they found it impossible to carry out the customs of their nation, and reduce the body to ashes; and hence entombed it

in this vault, with the arms which their leader had used during his lifetime. More than two thousand years had passed before it was opened; and in that time every trace of the body and its softer clothing had been destroyed, leaving only the imperishable metals.



A FLEET OF ROMAN GALLEYS IN THE MEDITERRANEAN.

These are the stories of ancient times in regard to America. It will be noticed that while there are accounts of men who reached the western shores of the Atlantic, it would seem that there are none of whom it is said that they returned. Yet the fables of Atlantis shows that at some time the people of the eastern continent must have known something of the western. It is a curious fact, in this connection, that recent investigations have shown that the monuments of Mexico and Central America are surprisingly similar to those of Egypt; and there is a still greater degree of similarity between the picture-writing of these two far-distant parts of the world. How much of the civilization of Mexico and Peru, which has long been the wonder of white men, came originally from Egypt, the mother of the arts and sciences known to Europe?

At the very beginning of the Middle Ages, we find a claim of another discovery of America; but this time from the other coast. In 1761, Deguignes,

a French scholar whose name is now almost unknown, announced to the world that the Chinese discovered America in the fifth century, A. D. He derived this information from the official annals of the Chinese Empire, to which, he claimed, he had gained access. He tells us that he found that in the year 499 A. D., a Chinese Buddhist priest returned to Singan, the capital of China, from Tahan, or Khamschatka, saying that he had been to a country twenty thousand *li*, or about seven thousand miles, beyond Tahan. It is supposed by Deguignes from this statement of the distance, that he had crossed Behring's Strait and journeyed southward to California, or perhaps as far as Mexico. The explorer called this country Fusang, from the fact that the maguey, or American aloe, so plentiful in that part of North America, resembles the plant which the Chinese call fusang.

Before considering at more length the stories of those navigators who are said to have preceded Columbus in the discovery of America, let us see what difficulties were in the way. In the first place, the vessels which served for coasting voyages were, in very many cases, small and ill-fitted for buffeting with the storms of the Atlantic. We shall see hereafter, however, that an experienced sailor did not consider certain ships as unfitted for his purpose because they were smaller than many of his day; and, perhaps, in comparing the ships of the two periods, we are apt to place too much stress on the fact that the vessels of to-day are large, and conclude that because of their size they are safer. Possibly the small craft in which the early navigators crossed the Atlantic were far safer and more manageable than larger vessels would have been, without the aid of steam to speed them on their way.

A far greater difficulty lay in the ignorance of the sailors. Do we realize what it means to have no newspapers, no books except costly manuscripts, no schools except for those of high rank or who intended to enter the priesthood? Can a modern sailor imagine what it would be to drift upon an unknown sea, without chart or compass? Yet that is what these early seamen did, when they ventured far to the west, in search of land of whose very existence they were not sure.

The mariner's compass was not known in Europe until about the twelfth century; although it had been in use much earlier than this in China. A learned Florentine, who visited England in 1258, wrote home a letter describing one wonderful thing which he had seen. He had been to the great University of Oxford, which had had a European renown for hundreds of years even then, and had been admitted to the study of Friar Roger Bacon, a man so wise that most persons thought he must have sold himself to the devil to learn all that he knew. One of the wonderful things which he saw was the power which a piece of magnetic iron ore possessed over iron and steel; and the great friar, putting a long, slender bit of such ore on a piece of light wood, and letting it float on some water, showed the astonished traveler how

constantly one end of the rude needle pointed to the North Star. It was too strange a power to be wholly right, thought the people of that time; it could only be by Satanic direction that such powers could be given to a bit of senseless iron; how could a piece of metal know more than a Christian? And good, devout Catholics, in stormy weather, were often puzzled to know in what direction to look for the North Star. So the sailors refused to go in any vessel whose master was known to carry this magical contrivance; and it was only when they found that exorcisms and blessings and signs of the cross did not take away this power of the magnet, that they began to believe it did not come from the devil after all. This foolish prejudice against the mariner's compass once removed, a great difficulty in the way of oceanic exploration was smoothed away.

If we may believe the claims of several nations, however, America was discovered more than once before the mariner's compass was in use among European sailors. There are some claims that the Irish, at a period which is not fixed, had sailed westward and reached the farther shores of the Atlantic; and the people of the northern part of Europe told of a country which they called Great Ireland, in very much the same way as the people of the southern part, at a little earlier day, told of Atlantis. It must be remembered in reading of this Irish voyage, that in very early times Ireland was a much more highly civilized country than England. The schools of Ireland were famous throughout Europe, before those of Oxford and Cambridge and Paris were dreamed of, and while the wolves yet howled around the sites of Heidelberg and Leipsic. Such a nation, then, would have many men who knew the story of Atlantis; it might be told to some adventurous sailors, who would employ all the arts of the then civilized world in fitting out a vessel to voyage thither; and who might possibly accomplish the journey and return in safety.

The next account which we shall notice is the story told by the Welsh bards, that in the twelfth century America was discovered by some of their countrymen. The bards, or poets, were the historians of Wales, before, in the fourteenth century, it was conquered by the king of England and made a part of his dominions; in their songs we find all that can be known of the history of Wales; and this is not contradicted by the written history of other nations, in those particular instances where they tell of the same event.

According to them, the death of a king named Owen brought about great dissensions among his sons, who each desired the kingdom for himself, excepting Madoc, who seems to have been a lover of peace. While the other brothers were fighting to decide this question, Madoc sailed away to the westward in search of a country where there was no war. Leaving Ireland to the north, he continued his course until he reached a beautiful and fertile country, supposed, by those who fully accept the account, to have been the coast

of the southern portion of the United States. But he was not content to enjoy this new-found paradise with the few who had come with him; he wished to share it with all who loved peace. He accordingly returned to Wales, and spread the story of his discovery far and wide. Three hundred answered his call, and with ten ships he sailed away again to the western land, but, sad to say, was never heard of more.

In 1740, there appeared in the *Gentleman's Magazine*, an English periodical of high standing, a letter dated more than fifty years before, narrating how the writer, a Welsh clergyman and a graduate of the University of Oxford, had, in company with some other persons, been captured by some Indians of the Tuscarora tribe, near what is now called Cape Hatteras. This occurred about the beginning of the year 1661. The prisoners were in much danger from the Indians, but the reverend gentleman, much to his surprise, found that he could make them understand him by speaking in his native language, which was substantially the same as their own. By pleading with them in Welsh, he succeeded in making friends with them, and he and his companions were well treated during the four months that they remained with the Indians. He adds that he preached to the Indians in Welsh, three times a week during this period. To this communication the name of the Rev. Morgan Jones is signed.

This testimony alone would be of little weight; for it was written twenty-five years after the occurrence, and published fifty-five years after it was written. Others, however, have told of the Indians who speak Welsh; and more than one Welshman, who knew no language except that and English, is said to have been able to talk to the Indians, and understand them, although they knew no language but their own. Mr. Jones describes the Indians into whose hands he fell as being so light in color that he first took them for white men; and it is true that the Tuscaroras, who were the sixth of the famous Six Nations, were frequently called white Indians.

It is said, also, that the Conestogas showed especial hatred to such whites as were of a fair complexion; and a red-haired, blue-eyed person, would be more cruelly treated by them than one with dark hair and eyes. An enthusiastic Welshman declares that this was because their remote ancestors had had hard battles with Madoc and his followers, and they instinctively recognized persons of fair hair as bitter enemies.

How much of the story of Madoc is true, we do not know, but it seems to fit in with what the Mexicans told the Spaniards: that they had been taught many things by white strangers from the east, who had gone back across the Atlantic, promising to return. If this were Madoc and his companions, it seems that they never reached America after leaving Wales the second time, but were lost to both continents. If, on the other hand, the ancestors of the Tuscaroras were Welshmen, Madoc's ten ships reached their destination, but

those which tried to return were lost. One thing is certain: Madoc and his handful of men could not have civilized Mexico and settled North Carolina. One claim or the other must be given up.



DISCOVERY OF GREENLAND BY NORSE SHIPS.

We come now to the account of the discovery of America by navigators from another country, whose claims to having actually reached the shores of the western continent are clearer and better proved than any of those who went before them. The discoveries of the Norsemen are recorded in their sagas; and being written history, these accounts deserve more credit than

any mere traditions. The only question is, what land was actually reached: was it a portion of the New England coast, or was it nearer the coast of Greenland?

From the Saga of Erik the Red we condense and modernize the following account:—

Thorvald and his son Erik removed from the southwestern coast of Norway to Iceland, in consequence of murder, after several colonies had been established in that island. Thorvald died there, and Erik married. Moving northward from where he first settled, Erik's name of "The Red" seems to have been merited by new deeds of violence; for shortly after the birth of his son Leif he was compelled to remove again, this time to the westward. Disputes between him and his new neighbors arose, as a result of which he was declared an outlaw. Gunnbjorn, a countryman of Erik's, had sailed to the westward and brought back word that there was land there; it is supposed that this land was Gunnbjarnasker, now concealed, or rendered inaccessible, by the descent of Arctic ice. Erik said he would come back to his friend if he found the land, says the old chronicle; and it would appear from this that he was desperate; if he did not find land, he would perish in the waste of waters. He reached Greenland, seen then by European eyes for the first time, and touched at a point which he named Midjokul; the term *jokul* being applied to a mountain covered with snow.

Reaching Greenland in the spring or summer, he remained there for two winters. The third summer he went to Iceland, and anchored his ship near the point from which he had sailed. He called the land which he had found Greenland, because, said he, "People will be attracted thither, if the land has a good name."

Remaining in Iceland all winter, probably to get recruits for his new enterprise, he sailed back to Greenland the next summer, with a fleet of thirty-five vessels; but of these only fourteen reached their destination; some were lost, and the others driven back.

The saga places this settlement fifteen winters before Christianity was established by law in Iceland, or 985 A. D.; Iceland having been settled 874 A. D.

One of the settlers who accompanied Erik was named Herjulf. His son, Bjarni, was a bold and daring sailor, who possessed his own ship while still a very young man. It was his custom to spend every second winter with his father, the remainder of the time being given to the sea. Accordingly, he set sail from Norway in the summer time, and arrived in Iceland only to find that his father had moved to Greenland.

These tidings, the old chronicle says, appeared serious to Bjarni, and he was unwilling to unload his ship. Then his seamen asked him what he would do: he answered that he intended to continue his custom, and spend the

winter with his father; and asked them if they would accompany him to Greenland. They assented to this, though none of them had been in the "Greenland Ocean." Putting to sea, they had fair weather for three days; but after that, fogs arose, and continued many days. Finally, they saw land. They were doubtful, however, if this was Greenland; and sailed closer before they could determine. Seeing that it was without mountains, but covered with wood, they decided that it could not be the country which they were seeking, and leaving it on the larboard side, sailed two days before they again saw land. This, again, did not answer the description, being a flat land covered with wood.

The sailors, however, were tired of seeking a land the location of which they did not know, and wished to go ashore here; pretending, when Bjarni objected, that they were in need of wood and water. He stoutly refused to permit it, however, and at last they unwillingly turned the prow from the land. Sailing three days with a south-west wind, they saw another land, covered with mountains and ice-hills; but this did not appear inviting to Bjarni, and he forbade the sails to be lowered. As they kept on their course, they saw that this was an island.

Once more putting out to sea, they sailed four days, when they saw the fourth land. It seemed to Bjarni that this answered the description of Greenland, and putting about for shore, they chanced to land just at the point where Bjarni's father, Herjulf, had settled.

What were the three lands that he saw? If we carefully trace his course on the map, remembering that the Norsemen reckoned a day's sail at about thirty geographical miles, and keeping in mind what is said of the direction of the wind, we can but come to the conclusion that the first land seen was Connecticut or Long Island, while the great island was doubtless Newfoundland; the second land was some point between the two.

This is the first written record which we have of the discovery of the mainland of America. The voyage was made at some time in the late summer or autumn of 985; but, as we have seen, the Europeans did not attempt to land.

Bjarni went back to Norway, where he boasted of his discovery; but the fact that he had refused to land became somewhat a matter of reproach to him. His experiences, however, caused much talk about voyages of discovery, and Leif, the son of that quarrelsome Erik the Red, who had first settled Greenland, sailed away to the south-west with thirty-five men.

One of these is called in the saga a Southern; he was probably a German. But we will quote the simple old story itself:—

"Now prepared they their ship, and sailed out into the sea when they were ready, and then found that land first which Bjarni had found last. There sailed they to the land, and cast anchor, and put off boats, and went

ashore, and found there no grass. * * * * Then said Leif: "We have not done like Bjarni about this land, that we have not been upon it: now will I give the land a name, and call it Helluland."

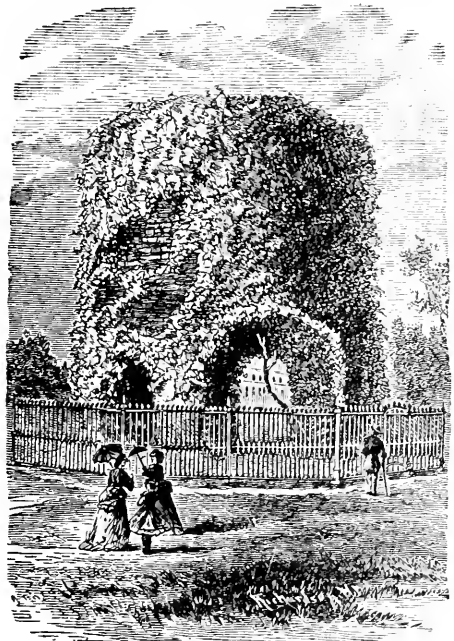
"Then went they on board, and after that sailed out to sea, and found another land; they sailed again to the land, and cast anchor, then put off boats and went on shore. This land was flat, and covered with wood, and white sands were far around where they went, and the shore was low."

The country was accordingly named Markland, which means woodland in the Norse tongue. Returning to the ship, they sailed again into the open sea before a north-east wind. Two days later, they came to an island, supposed, from the distance and direction, to have been Nantucket; thence their course lay along the coast until they reached Mt. Hope Bay. They noted that on the shortest day in winter—for they remained here all winter—the day was nine hours long; the sun rising at half-past seven and setting at half-past four. This circumstance confirms the conclusion drawn from the direction and length of their course over the seas; for the time of sunrise and sunset varies with the latitude; and the times given by them correspond with the actual length of the day at this point.

Having determined to settle at this point, they "built there large houses." Was one of these buildings that Round Tower at Newport, the origin of which has been so much debated? Leif divided his party, sending half out upon journeys to explore the land, while the others remained at home.

They did not go far, it being understood that they were always to be back at night-fall. Leif himself sometimes accompanied these expeditions; sometimes stayed at home.

"It happened one evening that a man of the party was missing, and this was Tyrker the German. This took Leif much to heart, for Tyrker had been long with his father and him, and loved Lief much in his childhood. Lief now took his people severely to task, and prepared to seek for Tyrker, and took twelve men with him. But when they had gotten a short way from the house, then came Tyrker toward them, and was joyfully received. Leif soon



ROUND TOWER AT NEWPORT, RHODE ISLAND.

saw that his foster-father was not in his right senses. Tyrker had a high forehead, and unsteady eyes, was freckled in the face, small and mean in stature, but excellent in all kinds of artifice. Then said Leif to him:—

“ ‘Why wert thou so late, my fosterer, and separated from the party?’ ”



LEIF AND HIS MEN FIND TYRKER.

“ Tyrker now spoke first, for a long time, in German, and rolled his eyes about to different sides, and twisted his mouth, but they did not understand what he said. After a time he spoke Norse:—

“ ‘I have not been much further off, but still I have something new to tell of; I found wine-wood and wine-berries.’ ”

“ ‘But is that true, my fosterer?’ said Leif.

“ ‘Surely is it true,’ replied he, ‘for I was bred up in a land where there is no want either of wine-wood or wine-berries.’

“ They slept now for the night, but in the morning, Leif said to his sailors:

“ ‘We will now set about two things, in that the one day we gather grapes, and the other day cut vines and fell trees, so from thence will be a loading for my ship.’

“ And that was the counsel taken, and it is said their long boat was filled with grapes. Now was a cargo cut down for the ship, and when the spring came, they got ready and sailed away, and Lief gave the land a name after its qualities, and called it Vinland.”

The next voyage was made by Thorvald, the younger brother of Leif. These voyagers made for the point where Leif and his companions had spent the winter, but were less fortunate than they had been. Leaving these houses behind them, they started upon a further journey of discovery; and here we find the story of the first encounter between Indians and Europeans. Having landed, Thorvald and his men saw three skin-boats drawn up on the sand; they approached them, and found that there were three men under each. Dividing, they surrounded the natives, and attacked them. One escaped; eight were captured and put to death. Thus early did the wanton war upon the Indians begin.

But the red man who had escaped had carried the tidings to his tribe; and that night, while Thorvald and his men were sleeping as peacefully as if they had not murdered their prisoners, were alarmed by the war-cry of the savages. They were repulsed, but one of the white men being wounded. That one was Thorvald; and the wound was evidently with a poisoned arrow, for he died, and was buried at the cape where he thought it best to dwell.

The next voyage was made by a third brother, Thorstein, who took his wife Gudrid with him. He died shortly after they returned to Greenland, and Gudrid married Thorfinn, an able seaman and merchant. Thorfinn fitted out a vessel to explore Vinland, and again Gudrid went with her husband to the new country.

Here a son was born to them, whom they named Snorre—the first child of European parentage born on the western continent. Thorwaldsen, the great sculptor, and many other eminent Norwegians, claimed descent from Snorre Thorfinnson, born in America in 1007 A. D.

Thorfinn and his party met the natives several times, but did not fight them, as the early explorers had done. They traded peaceably with them for awhile—cheating the Indians, of course—and thought there was no danger from them. But the roaring of a bull which the strangers brought with them so frightened the natives that they fled at their utmost speed, and were not seen again for three weeks. Then they returned in force, attacking the

strangers, who were glad to withdraw to the houses which they had built.

The Indians were repulsed, but the whites judged it wisest to leave a land where there was such danger from the natives. It must be remembered that these early Norsemen did not have the advantage of firearms, as those who came in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries had. The Indians had knives and axes of stone; the Norsemen had weapons of iron, and this was the sole advantage which they possessed. Hopelessly outnumbered, there was nothing for them to do but withdraw.

According to some authorities, one hundred of them refused to follow their leader back to Greenland, but remained in the new country, the land of corn and wine, as it truly seemed to these children of the frozen North. It is not certain, however, but what all of them went back to Greenland.

There were some minor voyages after this time; but during the century to which we have now come, a terrible plague swept over Norway, and so decreased the population that there was no need for the people to seek new homes beyond the sea. Perhaps the traditions of the terrible natives had something to do with this; or perhaps their energies were turned in other directions. Certainly, the voyages of the Norsemen to the coast of North America had ceased long before the time of Columbus; and the records were stored away, to be brought to light again nearly a thousand years after the first of such journeys was made.

We have already alluded to the Round Tower at Newport, which is supposed by many to be the work of the Norsemen; antiquarians claiming that it resembles certain structures in the Old World, which are known to have been built by this people. Another curious relic is found in what is called The Dighton Rock, which is situated about six and a half miles from Taunton, Massachusetts. This rock, which is about eleven and a half feet long at the base, and about five feet high, is covered on one face with an inscription, which Norsemen claim is written in the Runic characters which their ancestors used. The name of Thorfinn and the



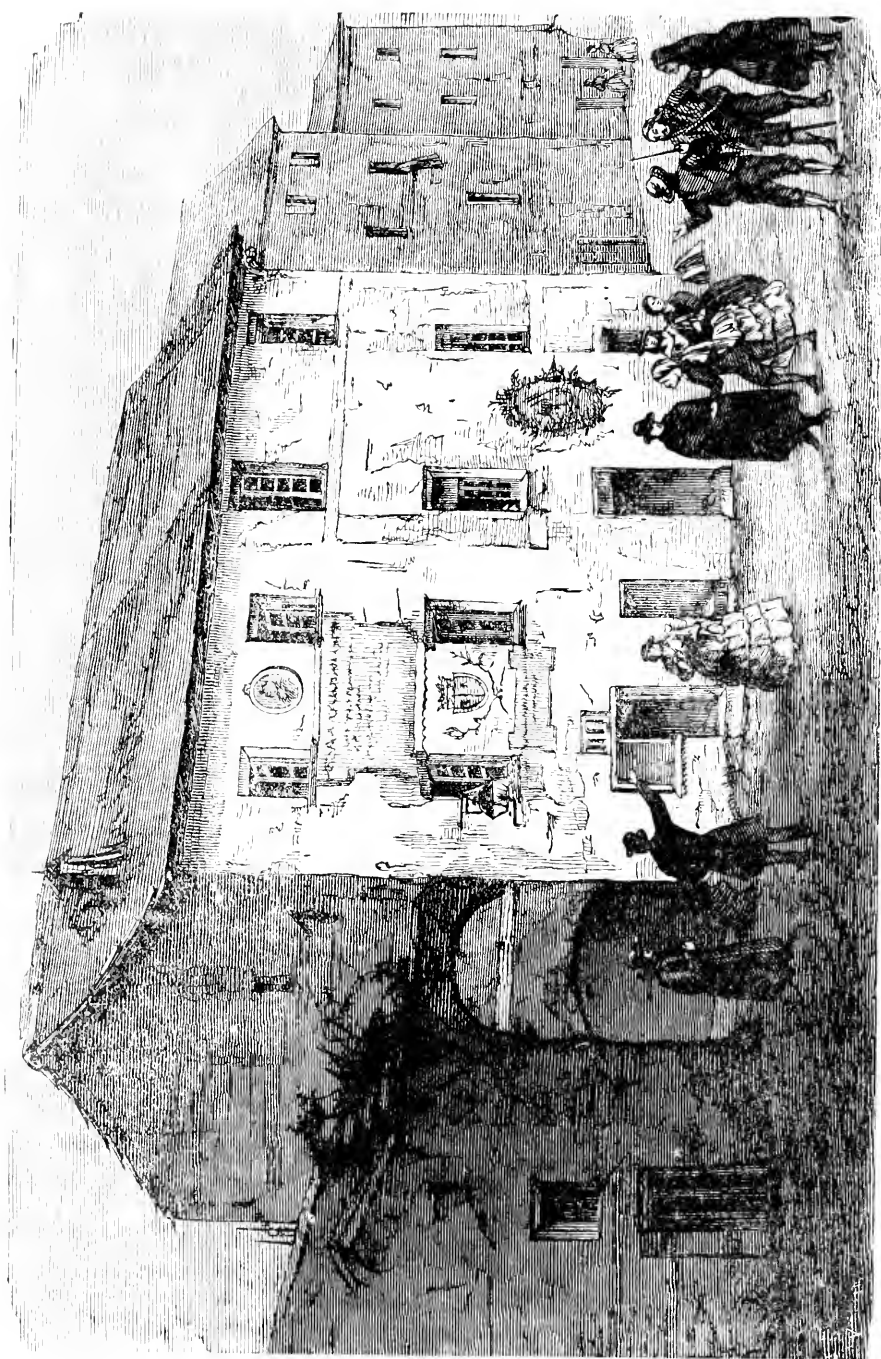
THE SKELETON IN ARMOR.

number of his followers are about the only points which they have been able to make out. It is right to state here that their claim of its Norse origin is not undisputed. Schoolcraft, the best authority upon all matters relating to the American Indian, says it is an Indian picture-writing, and can be readily read by any one acquainted with their mode of expression.

Many Americans are acquainted with Longfellow's poem of "The Skeleton in Armor." This skeleton was dug up in the vicinity of Fall River; was it the body of Thorvald? We have no means of knowing.

It must be remembered that, in all these stories of the early discovery of America there is much that is uncertain and conjectural. Even those heroes whose adventures are recorded in the sagas, have had their claims contested; for they knew so little of geography that they could not clearly describe the position of the lands which they discovered. The difference between the earlier and the later discoverers may be stated thus: Those persons who reached the shores of America before the middle of the fifteenth century, were wild adventurers, knowing nothing of any means of preserving the record of their exploits but the wild songs of their native minstrels; Columbus and many of his successors were men of science, capable of observing and recording points which made patent to the world the facts of their achievements.

Thus ends the story of those who claimed to have discovered the western world before Columbus set out on his memorable voyage. We shall see, when we come to tell of his struggles to obtain recognition, whether he knew anything of what others had done before him by crossing the great Atlantic.



BIRTHPLACE OF COLUMBUS.

CHAPTER II.

COLUMBUS' LIFE BEFORE THE DISCOVERY OF AMERICA.

Date and Place of His Birth—A Poor Man's Son—Education—Geographical Knowledge of the Time—Ideas of India—Marco Polo—A Splendid Banquet—The Scoffers Rebuked—"Lord Millions"—The Story of His Travels—The Grand Khan—Cipango—Imprisoned at Genoa—Influence on Youths of Genoa—Columbus Sees Service—Deceiving a Mutinous Crew—Prince Henry of Portugal—Columbus at Lisbon—Marriage—An Honored Profession—Friends—Evidence of a World Beyond the Waters—Growth of His Great Idea—Toscanelli Consulted—Religious Character of Columbus—Application to Genoa—To Venice—Voyage to Iceland—Application to Portugal—A Scurvy Trick—Condition of European Countries—A Friend at Last—Disappointment—A Sketch of Spanish History—The War Against the Moor—Effect upon the Project of Columbus—Friends at Court—Received by King Ferdinand—The Great Council of Salamanca—The Folly of the Wise—The Arguments of Columbus—Delayed Decision—A Wandering Court—Invitation to Portugal—Letter from England—The Council's Decision—Columbus Sets out for France—At the Convent Gate—Friends at Palos—Appeal to the Queen—Demands of Columbus Rejected—A Courageous Courtier—Columbus Recalled—Isabella's Independence—Articles of Agreement.

HAVING now renewed briefly the claims of those nations which are said to have discovered America before it was reached by the Genoese sailor with his Spanish followers, let us learn what we can of the early years of the great discoverer—not only of his birth, childhood and education, but of the weary wanderings from place to place, the long years of labor and waiting, before he found friends with minds sufficiently large, and purses sufficiently filled, to assist him in this great undertaking.

He was the son of a wool-comber of Genoa, and the oldest of four children. Nothing is known of his sister, except that she married an obscure man named Savarello: of his brothers, Bartholomew, and Diego or James, we shall hear more, particularly of the first-named.

After Columbus grew famous, there were many efforts made to claim him as native of other places than Genoa: as it was said of the great Greek poet,

"Seven Grecian cities strove for Homer dead,
Through which the living Homer begged his bread."

Had these places been as anxious to assist the struggling genius as they were to borrow some of his glory, there would be much less to tell about disappointments and long weary waiting. The claims of Genoa are proved by the wording of the will of Columbus himself: "I was born there, and came from thence."

It is probable that, although his father was an humble tradesman or mechanic, the family had been one of some importance. Genoa was a mercantile city; and a wealthy family, reduced by misfortunes to poverty, would still retain friendship among those who were less unfortunate. We shall see, as we go on, that Columbus had some such friends; but just how much they did for him, and how much he won for himself, we cannot tell.

This much is certain: he was a poor man's son, born and brought up in a city the people of which derived their daily bread from trading. Look at the map of Italy, and remember that in those days there were not only no railroads, but no other roads that were safe and well kept; and you will readily see what part the sea played in the life of every Genoese. The great salt-water highway was the only one for their commerce; and every Genoese boy learned something of seamanship as naturally as a duck learns to swim.

His book education was supposed to be completed at the age of fourteen. He had then acquired a knowledge of the rudiments, reading, writing and arithmetic; he knew something of Latin, no hard study for an Italian, and had learned to draw. Some time had also been spent at the University of Pavia, where he studied geography, geometry, astronomy and navigation.

When we remember what parts of the earth have been discovered and explored since the middle of the fifteenth century, it does not seem that there would be much geography for the boy Columbus to study. And there was not. Even the eastern continent was largely unknown to the geographers of that time. With the coast of Europe, from the northern point of Europe to the Strait of Gibraltar, and thence along the Mediterranean, they were thoroughly well acquainted; of Africa, they knew only the northern coast and a small part of the western, as far south as Cape Bojador, a name which means "The Outstretcher;" and of Asia they knew the Mediterranean coast, a part of the southern coast, and thought that they had reliable accounts of the part farther to the east.

They were sure that the world was round, but thought it much smaller than it has since been proved to be. They reckoned that the known portions of the world covered about two hundred and twenty-five degrees of longitude, or about twice as great a proportion as modern geographers allow for it.

The world, or rather the land of the world, was wholly surrounded by the "Ocean Stream," beyond which lay, they thought, the path to the other world. The great salt sea to the south of Asia was probably no part of this, but was surrounded by land, the eastern coast of Africa turning to the east, and joining the south-eastern extremity of Asia; but opinions on this point varied, for some believed the Indian Sea, as it was called, to be a part of the ocean; and stoutly maintained that it would be possible to reach India by sailing around Africa. As to investigating the boundaries of the ocean, that would be the act of a madman; for countless dreadful and unknown dan-

gers must be faced, besides the absolute certainty that no one would ever be able to return. The earth is round, these wise men argued; and if one were to sail down from the summit, where we live, he would never be able to sail his ship up-hill, to reach home again.



SEA BISHOP AND MERMAIDS.

Besides, in and about that sea, in the dim light of fading day, crawled, seethed, fluttered and swam all the monsters that terror could conjure up. The enormous nautilus, able with one stroke of its live oars to capsize a ship; the sea-serpent, fifty leagues long, with a comb like a cock's; the syrens of Homer, ceaselessly pursued by the cruel sea-monk, which was still believed in as late as 1826; and, finally, the dreadful bishop of the sea, with his phosphorescent mitre. Harpies and winged chimeras skimmed this mo-



THE PHANTOMS OF FEAR.

tionless sea in pursuit of their prey; there were sea-elephants, lions, tigers and hippocampi, who grazed in vast fields of sea-weeds from which no ship could ever hope to extricate herself.

Out of this chaotic sea arose a colossal hairy hand armed with claws—the hand of Satan, *La Main Noire*; its existence could not be doubted—it was pictured on all the maps of the time.

From the bottom of the abyss there appeared also, from time to time, at regular intervals, the back of the kraken, like a new island, some said twice, others three times, as large as Sicily. This huge polypus, who, with one of its suckers—and it had as many as the cuttle-fish—could arrest a ship in full sail, was in the habit of rising to the surface every day. From its vent-holes issued two water-spouts six times as high as the Giralda of Seville. When it had squirted out the water, it would draw in a corresponding supply of air, thereby creating a whirlwind in which a ship would have spun like a top.

The kraken was not an evil-disposed monster; but it could not be denied that its enormous dimensions rendered it, to say the least, an unpleasant object. And even without the kraken, and supposing that the Black Hand of Satan did not dare to descend on a fleet whose royal ensign bore the image of Christ crucified, which had the ever-blessed Virgin for its patroness, how were they to escape from the two-headed eagle with its enormous wings, or from the formidable roc, which had seized and carried off in its talons, before the Arab traveler's eyes, a vessel equipped with a hundred and fifty men?

These were some of the things which the boy Columbus learned at the great and famous University of Padua; when he became a pupil in the University of Hard Knocks, he acquired information that was quite different.

But why was India considered of so much importance? For, we have seen that it was debated whether or not it would be possible to reach India by sea; and although we have not yet reached that point in telling the life of Columbus, there is not a reader of these pages but knows beforehand that he expected to reach India by sailing westward.

For a long time the regions of the far east had been considered the home of luxury of every kind. Perhaps the stuffs which merchants brought from there had something to do with this belief; perhaps it was only because people wanted to tell themselves some kind of a marvelous story, and imagined these things. Some of these stories had come down from ancient times; others had been told by the Arabs and Moors, who had settled in Spain, and with whom there was more or less intercourse. What we know as European Turkey was not in the hands of the Turks when Columbus was a school-boy, if we accept 1435 as the date of his birth; so that nothing could have come from them.

There were not warring travelers' tales, to excite the popular curiosity re-

garding the east. In the year 1295 there arrived at Venice three men, very shabbily dressed in travel-stained garments. The eldest of these declared that his name was Nicholas Polo, and that his companions were his brother Maffeo and his son Marco. But the relatives of the Polos, who had started upon a commercial voyage to the east some forty years before, refused to recognize or invite these shabby strangers to their magnificent houses, for they were all rich and aristocratic. The Polos, however, managed to obtain possession of their own dwelling, and then invited all the proud relations to a banquet. Perhaps it was out of curiosity that all went; such curiosity was most abundantly gratified.

The three hosts, whose worn and travel-stained garments had so offended the ideas of the dainty Venetians, had been exchanged for rich robes of crimson satin, such as the nobles were in the habit of wearing upon state occasions. When, however, the guests had been received, these costly clothes were cut up and distributed among the servants, while the masters reappeared, robed in still richer costumes of crimson damask. These shared the fate of the other dresses, and the Polos arrayed themselves in crimson velvet. When the feast was over, they bade the servants bring in those robes in which they had returned to Venice; and ripping the seams, showed the astonished guests that these despised garments contained, thus hidden, jewels enough to have purchased the whole city of Venice.

Marco Polo, the youngest of the three, seems to have come in contact with the people much more than his father or uncle; and he told them, day after day, such stories of the magnificence of the princes whom they had visited, always reckoning the income of each potentate as so many millions, that an irreverent American would have dubbed him "Old Millions;" the Venetians, more polite in their nicknaming, styled him *Ser Milione*—"Lord Millions."

So great an influence did these stories have upon Columbus, that we must here pause and learn what parts of the earth were visited by these three travelers. We have seen that they left Venice about 1255, bound on a commercial journey to the east. At Constantinople, they sold the Italian goods which they had carried from home, and bought jewels with the proceeds. With these they set out to trade with the Tartars, who had then overrun many parts of Asia and Europe, and were building cities on the Volga. Here they were fortunate enough to meet with a Tartar prince who was extremely honest; they trusted him with their wealth; and in return for this trust were loaded with favors during the year they remained at his court.

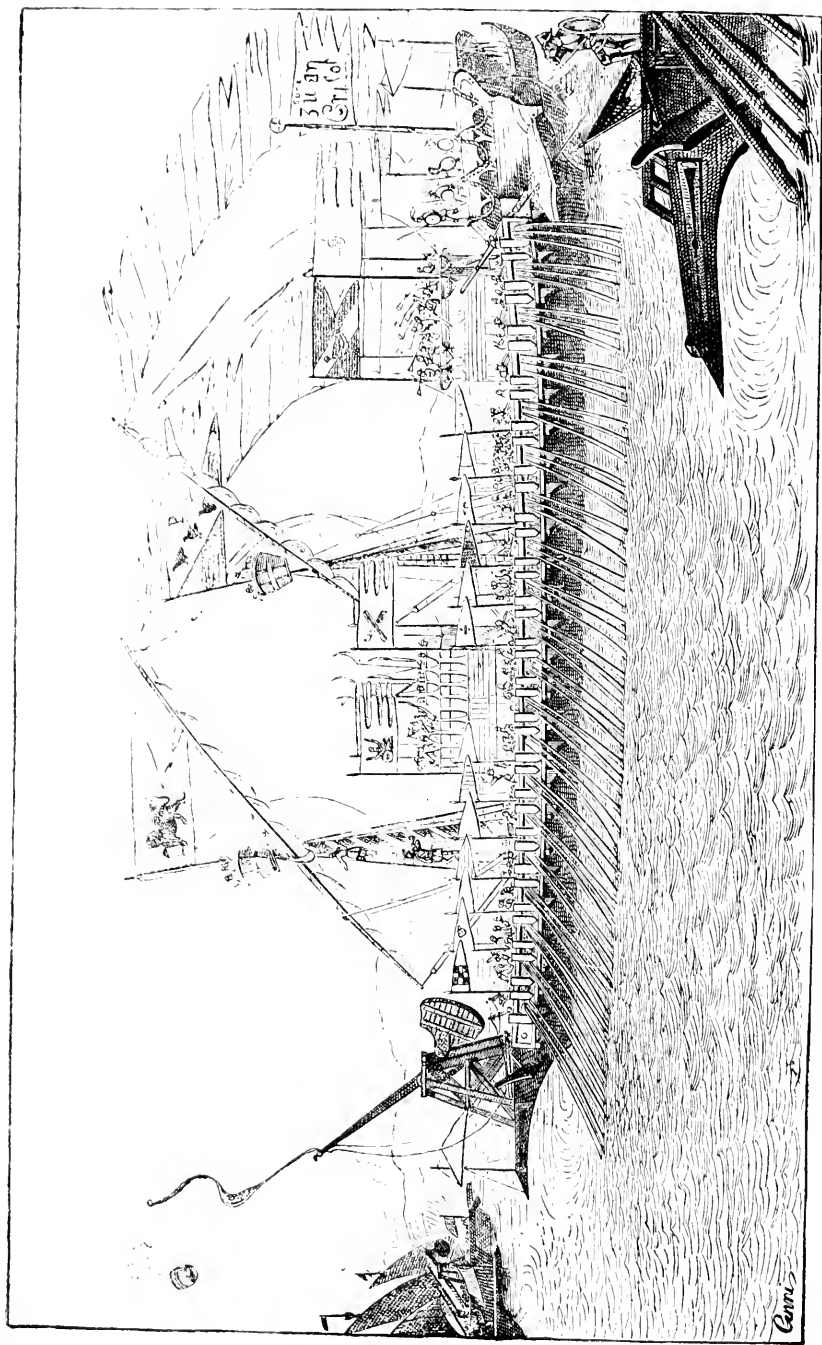
But war broke out between him and his neighbors; and the strangers found that they could not get home. They accordingly, after three years spent at Bokhara, joined an embassy which was going to the court of the Grand Khan, or King of Kings, the sovereign of all the Tartars.

This was situated at a city which Polo called Cambalu, since identified as Pekin. It was the capital of Cathay, of which wonderful stories had been told for many years; but the account which Marco Polo gave of its riches was still more wonderful.



MARCO POLO AT THE COURT OF KUBLAI KHAN.

To the east of this rich country lay an island, the name of which is variously spelled by different writers; we shall use the form Cipango, since in that shape the name frequently occurs in the writings of Columbus. The palace of the king of Cipango, the traveler asserted, was covered, not with sheets of lead or copper, as was the custom in Europe, but with sheets of



MARCO POLO'S SINGLE GALLEY ATTACKED BY SEVENTY FROM GENOA.

gold; and the golden plates used for its inside adornment were, in some cases, two inches thick. The island also produces pearls of fabulous size in large quantities, as well as great numbers of precious stones. It is so rich, he added, that even the mighty Khan, a prince far richer than any in Europe, had tried many times to conquer it, but had failed to do so, since the inhabitants had a secret by which they were enabled to make themselves secure against any kind of wound.

The sea between Cathay and Cipango is studded with seven thousand four hundred and forty small islands, all of which produce perfumes and valuable woods most abundantly.

The Great Khan, otherwise called Kúblai Khan, was much pleased to receive these strangers from the distant west. He prepared a feast for them, and asked, with much eagerness, for any information that they could give him of what was happening in Europe, requiring details of the government, of the various kings and emperors and their methods of making war. Matteo and Nicholas fortunately spoke the Tartar language fluently, so they could freely answer all the emperor's questions.

This mighty prince of the East had also shown great interest in the doctrines of Christianity, as taught by the Venetian merchants; and had requested them to take a message to the Pope, asking him to send at once a hundred learned men to instruct the wise men of Cathay in religion. All these statements were proved by the golden tablets with which the Khan had furnished them as passports, and by the magnificent jewels which they showed as his gifts to them.

How much of these stories was true? The contemporaries of the Polo regarded them as grossly exaggerated; neither friends nor foes believed the half was true. It is said that when Marco Polo was on his death-bed, some of his friends, distressed at the idea of his dying with all these falsehoods on his soul, exhorted him to retract what he had published; or, at least, to disavow such parts as were fictitious. The dying man raised himself and glared fiercely at them, as he replied that it was all true; only, he had not told half of the wonders that he saw.

So much for the travels of Marco Polo. How did they affect Columbus? Venice and Genoa are now close neighbors, cities of the same kind, their language and their laws alike. It was different then: the few miles between them were multiplied by the dangers and difficulties of the way; they were under distinct governments, and occasionally at war with each other; how could the Genoese boy be influenced by the accounts given a hundred and fifty years before, by the Venetian traveler?

It came about in this way. Shortly after the return of the wanderers, a Genoese fleet threatened part of the Venetian territory; it was necessary for Venice to defend herself. Of the fleet which was sent to oppose the enemy,

one galley was commanded by Marco Polo. Advancing, the first vessel of the line, upon the enemy, he was soon hotly engaged in battle. For some reason, the others did not follow as promptly as they should have done; and Marco Polo's single galley was surrounded by the seventy from Genoa.

Only the fate of the commander is matter of record; taken prisoner, he was thrown in irons, and carried to Genoa. Here he was detained a long time in prison, his captors refusing to accept any ransom. His prison was crowded daily with representatives of the nobility of the city, who came to hear the stories with which he had astonished Venice. At length, one of them prevailed upon him to write down the account of his travels. He consented; and sending to Venice for his papers and journals, produced the wonderful record now preserved in literature. In those days, before the invention of printing, books were of course costly and rare articles; but the stories in this one were of such interest that the student who had access to the volume would tell them to his less fortunate companions; they again to others; and so on, until all Genoa knew the tale of Marco Polo, and how he had lived, a prisoner of their city, in that very building, and there written the story of what he had seen. And then, doubtless, the Genoese would talk among themselves of this wonderful Cathay and the island of Cipango, full of gold and jewels and rare woods and perfumes, and say to each other what a pity it was that no one should have made any effort to convert these heathens, though Kublai Khan had asked for missionaries. Then, perhaps, they would talk of Prester John, that wonderful Christian Prince, whose dominions were nobody knew exactly where, but to whom some messenger ought to be sent. Then they would get to talking of the difficulties in the way of these duties, and recount the terrors by land and by sea which would confront the traveler—great winged lions, giant cannibals, and tremendous sea-serpents.

Did all this talk of far-off countries bear no fruit in Genoa for a hundred and fifty years? There were many Genoese youths who went from the city, bent on seeing far-off lands; but until the days of Columbus there was not one who had an idea that India and Cathay and Cipango could be reached by sailing to the west. Others were content to follow; and the name of the one great leader is the only famous one among them all.

In regard to the wanderings of the young men of Genoa, a historian of that city says that they go with the intention of returning when they shall have acquired the means of living comfortably and honorably in their native place; but, he adds, of twenty who go, scarce two return; either dying abroad, or marrying foreign wives and settling in their country, or finding some safer and more comfortable home for their declining age than their native city.

For a few months after his return from Pavia, the boy Columbus worked

at his father's trade; but this could not last long. Soon he, too, followed the example of so many of his countrymen, and engaged in a seafaring life.

His first service was under the command of a relative, a Colombo who had for some time past held the rank of an admiral. We cannot tell the degree of relationship; probably it was very distant; for, as we have seen, the father of the discoverer was a poor man, a mechanic. In the fifteenth century, a man who worked was thought very little of; quite below consideration, in fact: and perhaps the old admiral was not very proud of his poor relations.



THE YEARS OF PREPARATION.

Cruising in the Mediterranean was then no child's play; for there was scarcely a part of the sea that was not beset with pirates; petty states were constantly at war, and frequently their vessels would seize those whose mas-

ters were not engaged in war with any one. A merchant vessel had to carry arms, and be ready to use them at very short notice. Columbus, however, was not engaged in the merchant service. A French prince, John of Anjou, asserted his right to the kingdom of Naples, a small state in the south of Italy. The republic of Genoa was an ally, and sent ships and men to his assistance; the war lasted for about four years, and ended in the defeat of John of Anjou and his father, King Reinier of Provence.

Columbus was assigned to no small post in the fleet commanded by his relative; boy as he was, he had dangerous work to do. He tells us of his being sent to rescue a galley from the harbor of Tunis.

"It happened to me that King Reinier—whom God has taken to himself—sent me to Tunis, to capture the galley *Fernandina*, and when I arrived off the island of San Pedro, in Sardinia, I was informed that there were two ships and a carrack with the galley; by which intelligence my crew were so troubled that they determined to proceed no further, but to return to Marseilles for another vessel and more people; as I could not by any means compel them, I assented apparently to their wishes, altering the point of the compass and spreading all sail. It was then evening, and next morning we were within the Cape of Carthage, while all were firmly of opinion that they were sailing towards Marseilles."

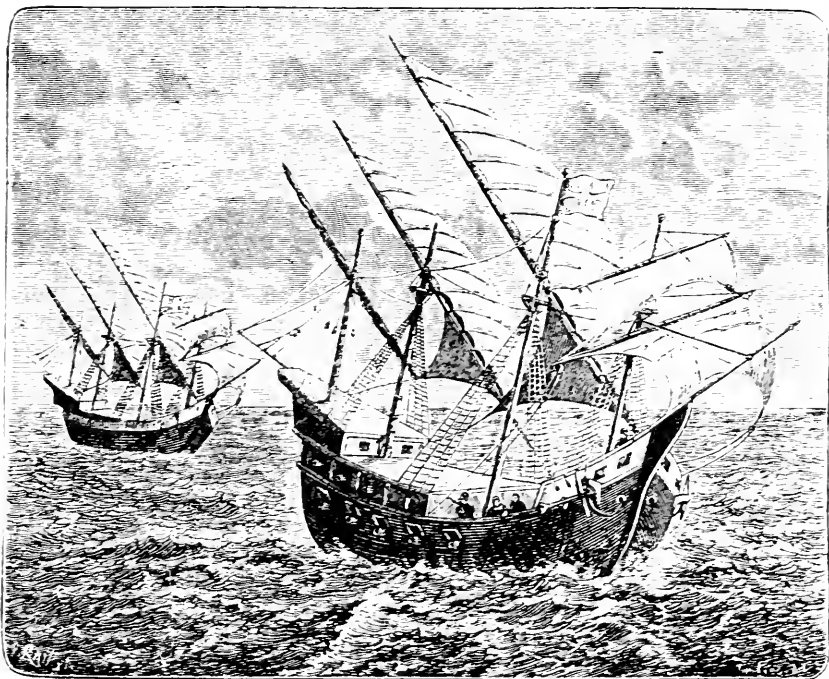
What the sailors said when they found out that he had deceived them as to the direction in which they were sailing by thus altering the point of the compass, does not appear; nor are we told the result of the cruise into the harbor of Tunis; probably the same bold and resolute spirit which had outwitted the crew gained a victory over the enemy. We shall see after awhile that he again deceived a crew, and again brought the voyage, by this deception, to a successful ending.

Now and again we find some traces of Columbus in the history of the time; but it is doubtful whether the person meant was the old admiral under whom the discoverer sailed as a boy, or a nephew called Colombo el Mozo, the Younger, or the youngest and finally by far the most famous of the three. Probably most of the exploits recorded are to be placed to the account of the first or the second, for Christopher was not likely to have attracted so much attention in these years.

It is probable that he was early attracted to the capital of Portugal as a suitable place for a man to live who was interested in adventures and explorations by sea; for Lisbon was then the starting-point of many great expeditions. Prince Henry of Portugal was the first prominent person to engage in the work of carrying forward discovery; and during the first half of the fifteenth century, under his direction, Portuguese ships had ventured farther and farther along the coast of what is still the Dark Continent. Prince Henry died in 1463; but the work of discovery to which he had given

strength still went forward; Diaz was sent to find, in the interior of Africa, the king who has already been mentioned, Prester John; he found, instead, the Cape of Good Hope. It is worthy of remark, that Bartholomew Columbus was one of the sailors who ventured on this long voyage.

There is a story of the manner in which Christopher Columbus first came to Lisbon, which may here be set down. While the story is not without foundation, it should be remembered that Columbus was a resident of Lisbon some time before this; so that he was but returning to a place where he had lived.



DIAZ ON HIS WAY TO THE CAPE.

He was in command of a vessel of the squadron under the leadership of Colombo el Mozo. This admiral was really little better than a pirate; and having heard that four richly laden galleons were on their way from Flanders, as the Low Countries were then called, to Venice, he gave orders to his captains to lie in wait for them off the coast of Portugal, between Lisbon and Cape St. Vincent. There was a desperate battle; the ships were lashed and grappled together; the sailors fought hand to hand, now on the deck of one, now of the other. The vessel commanded by Columbus was grappled with a huge galley of the Venetian fleet, the crew of which fought with even more

fierceness than their companions. A favorite form of warfare in that time consisted of throwing fiery darts and hand grenades; sometimes in throwing Greek fire, a nearly inextinguishable thing. Such missiles were thrown on this occasion; the ships took fire; they were too firmly grappled together to be unloosed, and burned to the water's edge, side by side, Venetian and Genoese. The crews had but one common hope of escape; each man threw himself into the sea, grasping whatever wood was within reach. Columbus chanced to secure an oar, and although they were fully six miles from shore, succeeded in swimming to land. Thence he made his way to Lisbon, where he found many of his countrymen living; perhaps he found there his brother Bartholomew, known for his bravery as a navigator since he had accompanied Diaz in that perilous voyage far to the south, when the Cape of Good Hope had been discovered. Certainly he found such a welcome that he decided to remain there for some time to come.

Columbus went to Portugal about the year 1470. Although at this time, if we accept the earliest date given for his birth, he was in the very prime of life, being but thirty-five years old, his hair was as white as that of a very old man. In person, he was tall, well-formed and muscular; and he had achieved a victory over a naturally quick temper so completely as to mark his bearing with a grave and gentle dignity. Throughout his life, he had shown great regard for the church, strictly observing the fasts, vigils, and other forms of devotion prescribed by her priests; and this quality seems to have had fuller opportunity for development in the peaceful life at the Portuguese capital than among the wild rovers of the sea.

There is a certain convent in Lisbon, styled the Convent of All Saints, where young ladies of rank and family were then, as now in similar institutions, received for instruction in all that a lady is supposed to learn at school. In addition to these inmates were some others, who boarded at the convent as a safe and proper shelter for women of their age and rank. One was a certain Dona Felipa de Perestrello, the daughter of a man who had won renown and reward as a leader of explorers in the time of Prince Henry; and had, indeed, colonized the island of Porto Santo, of which he had held the office of governor. But this very office was the cause of his ruin. It was conferred upon him as a reward for his long-continued services, and seemed to be full payment. But the colonists took some rabbits with them to the island; and the little animals multiplied so rapidly that before long it was completely overrun by them. There was no demand for canned meats in those days, or knowledge of preparing them; or the unlucky colonists might have done as nineteenth century men have done under precisely the same circumstances—killed the rabbits and exported the canned flesh. As it was, they fought the pests as long as they could; but were finally compelled to give up the contest, and leave the island to the ravages of the rabbits.

Perestrello returned to Portugal, a ruined man; for all that he had previously acquired had been invested in property in this island. He died, leaving a widow and three daughters, one of whom, as mentioned above, was a boarder in this Convent of All Saints.

The services in the chapel of this convent were regularly attended by a certain Genoese who had recently arrived at Lisbon; and in some way, we cannot tell how, Christopher Columbus became acquainted with the ruined governor's daughter. Of this romance of four hundred years ago, we only know that it began with a meeting in the convent chapel, and ended with a marriage in the same place.

For a time, the newly-married couple lived with the bride's mother; and the husband added to the family income by making maps and charts, and illuminating manuscripts. This work was not regarded then as it is now; then, the map-maker was a man of science and an artist combined, and was respected accordingly. It is recorded that the Venetians struck a medal in honor of one cosmographer, who had projected a universal map, esteemed the most accurate that had ever been made. It is also a matter of history, that Americus Vesputius paid a sum equivalent to \$555 in our time for a "map of sea and land." Thus Columbus engaged in a work which was well-paid, and which placed the workman in a position of no small honor.

Nor was his new life such as to hinder his advancement. His wife's father had left numerous notes and charts of his many voyages, and these were placed at his disposal, when Madam Perestrello saw that his character and skill justified her in so doing. Then, too, although the Perestrello family had become reduced to poverty, there were still many influential persons whose acquaintance they retained; and by this means the Genoese wanderer received introductions to a higher circle than he could have reached unassisted; and was even received by the king himself. Once brought to their notice, he had no difficulty in retaining their regard by his own merits.

In the meantime, a younger daughter of Madam Perestrello had married Don Pedro Correa; and he had been appointed governor of Porto Santo. De Belloy says that he inherited this government from his father-in-law; but why the younger sister's husband should be the heir, does not appear; probably his own influence was sufficient to procure the appointment, if the Perestrellos were not against it. The two sons-in-law of the old governor appear to have been on excellent terms, and conversed much of the new lands which were constantly being discovered. Nor did Columbus only talk of them; he had, since his residence in Portugal, sailed occasionally in the expeditions to the Gulf of Guinea; and we may safely assume that he was well acquainted with the history of Portuguese discovery along the coast of that continent.

Discovery was the great subject of interest in Portugal at that day; and it was natural enough that when the learned map-maker Columbus was admitted

to the presence of nobles and princes, that they should inquire about his work, and remark upon recent changes. Perhaps they listened with interest to his accounts of his own voyages; perhaps he now and then unfolded some plan by which new routes to India and Cathay might be found. Certainly the King looked so kindly upon him, and showed so much interest in the subject which so absorbed the stranger's attention, that he entered into conversation regarding indications of lands yet undiscovered, and showed Columbus reeds as large as those which grow in India, which had been picked up on the coast of the Azores.

Nor was this the only indication that there was a world beyond the waters. Many mariners had told of islands, seen casually in the ocean; and the people of the Canaries told of an island which was sometimes seen, in clear weather, to the westward of their islands; a vast stretch of earth, diversified with lofty mountains and deep valleys. So persuaded were they of the reality of this island, that they asked and obtained the permission of the King of Portugal to discover it. Several expeditions were actually sent out, but not one succeeded in reaching the island; for it had been but a singular optical delusion. Then arose the story of St. Brandan's Isle, an island which, it was said, was sometimes reached by those who set out for another port, but were driven from their course by storms; but could never be approached by any who set out with the intention of going there. This imaginary island was, for many years, laid down in maps as lying far to the west of the Canaries; and its existence was never actually disproved until the southern Atlantic was thoroughly explored.

Columbus, however, appears to have been but slightly impressed by this talk of islands in the Atlantic. He always considered that the talk was occasioned by the existence of rocky islets, which, under certain conditions of the atmosphere, may assume the appearance of much larger and more fertile islands. Or, he reasoned, they may be floating islands, where a mass of earth is supported by twisted roots, and borne along by the ocean currents and the winds.

More conclusive evidence was found by him in the things that had drifted ashore. Great pines, unlike any known in Europe, had drifted ashore; pieces of wood, curiously and delicately carved, but unlike the handiwork of any known people, had been brought by the same agency to the coast of the Azores and the Madeiras; and the same shores had received, from the same westward direction, the bodies of two men of some strange race.

These were the subjects on which he conversed with his brother-in-law, like himself a bold and clever seaman. Correa had seen these carvings, and perhaps added many a rumor to the stock of information which Columbus had gleaned from many different quarters.

Direct testimony was not wanting. Martin Vicente, a pilot in the service

of the King of Portugal, related to Columbus that after sailing four hundred and fifty leagues to the west of Cape St. Vincent, he had taken from the water a wonderfully carved piece of wood, which must have drifted from the far west: a mariner who had sailed from the port of St. Mary narrated how, in the course of a voyage to Ireland, he had seen land far in the west, which the crew took for some remote part of Tartary.

There is also a story, which seems to have no good foundation, that a certain pilot sought shelter in Columbus' house, and finally died there, after having told him of an unknown land in the west, to which he had been driven by adverse winds: this pilot, says the story, left to Columbus the chart by which he had guided his vessel, and thus Columbus was enabled to cross the ocean by a path which had already been marked out, with the certainty of finding land at the end of his voyage. This story was mentioned by the first historian who gave it a place in his pages, as a vulgar, idle rumor: and he showed the falsity of it. Others, however, copied his summary of it, but not his contradiction: and a hundred and fifty years after it was said to have occurred, Garcilaso de la Vega told it, complete with names and circumstances, as he had heard it told in his childhood by his father and other old men, who talked of it some seventy or eighty years after the death of the pilot. On such slender foundations does this attack upon the originality of Columbus rest.

Columbus and his wife accompanied Don Pedro Correa and his wife to the island of Porto Santo, when the new governor went there to assume the duties of the office: and there the great navigator's eldest son, Diego, was born. His residence on this island was probably of but short duration: and was followed by voyages along the coast of Africa. In 1473 we find him at Savona, assisting his aged father, whom debt had compelled to flee from Genoa: before this time, he had contributed regularly to the support of his parents and the assistance of his younger brothers.

All this time, there had been growing up in his mind the idea that it would be possible to reach India by sailing to the west. We have seen what trifles confirmed his theory that there was land beyond the Atlantic, while he rejected those widely-believed stories about islands that had been seen: this theory was drawn from a close study of the learned writers, and the reports of navigators, and the known shape of the earth.

In the year 1474 these ideas were fully matured: but either they had not been unfolded to any one in Lisbon, or they had been coldly and contemptuously received. Columbus determined to take the subject to the highest living authority upon such questions, and wrote to the learned Toscanelli, of Florence, submitting to him the question whether it would be possible to reach India by sailing in a westerly direction. Toscanelli showed his greatness by appreciation of Columbus, and responded with a letter, applauding

the bold and original design of the Genoese. Nor was the letter all that was sent; there was also a chart, drawn by Toscanelli himself, partly from the ancient authority of Ptolemy, and partly from the descriptions of Marco Polo. In this chart, India, Cathay, and the longed-for Cipango, were depicted as lying directly to the west of Europe, and but a short distance away. This was in accordance with the prevailing idea, before noticed, that the earth was much smaller than it has since been proved to be; and both Toscanelli and Columbus supposed Asia to be much larger than it really is. Thus two errors combined to make Columbus more ready to undertake his great work; had he known that the earth is more than twenty-five thousand miles in circumference, and that Cipango, as he called Japan, is half way around the world from the Azores, he would not, in all probability, have dared venture to seek India by way of the west. At any rate, whatever his own boldness might have been willing to risk, he would have got neither ships nor men from any safe and prudent prince.

Why should Columbus attach so much importance to reaching India by a shorter and safer route than any which was then used? His purpose was founded upon the deeply religious character of his mind. We have seen that Kublai Khan requested the Pope to send a hundred learned men to instruct his courtiers in the Christian religion; this had never been done. Again, much wealth might be gained by trading with these countries; and while the many wars for the recovery of the Holy Land from the Mohammedans had failed, it might be that the country of Palestine could be bought from them, if a sufficiently large price were offered. This motive explains many things in the life of Columbus which otherwise would not be clear.

This plan was complete in his mind before 1476; and in that year he went to his native city and offered to conduct a fleet from Genoa across the western ocean to the land of Kublai Khan. But the world was not yet ready for the idea thus laid before it; and the Councilors of Genoa, wrapping their furred mantles around them, replied with courteous dignity that their city had been too much impoverished by her numerous wars to undertake any such expensive enterprise.

Disappointed, but not disheartened, Columbus went to Venice, and made the same offer, only to meet with the same reception. He seems to have perceived, in this second refusal, that it was useless for him to talk more about it for the present; so, after a short visit to his father at Savona, he again went to sea.

His voyage in this year 1477 was in a new direction—to the far northwest. This is the record which he has left of his visit to Iceland, of which the Norsemen have made much:—

“In the year 1477, in February, I navigated one hundred leagues beyond Thule, the southern part of which is seventy-three degrees distant from the

equator, and not sixty-three, as some pretend; neither is it situated within the line which includes the west of Ptolemy, but is much more westerly. The English, principally those of Bristol, go with their merchandise to this island, which is as large as England. When I was there the sea was not frozen, and the tides were so great as to rise and fall twenty-six fathoms."

It is sometimes claimed that Columbus must have heard, during the course of this voyage, of the journeys of the Norsemen to Vinland and neighboring countries. Even if he did, if he read all the sagas that tell of their adventures, the knowledge thus gained only confirmed his theory, without detracting from the greatness of his discovery; he intended to find a new route to India; these lands which had been discovered had nothing in common with the thickly populated, wealthy and highly civilized domains of Kublai Khan. The Norsemen had never reached India.

But while Columbus spoke several of the languages of the south of Europe, we have no assurance that he was able to communicate with the Icelanders in their own tongue; and it is more than doubtful whether he ever heard of Vinland the Good.

Upon his return to the south, he did not push his project for some time: perhaps he had already laid it before the King of Portugal and received no encouraging answer; but of this we have no record. In 1481, the old King died, and was succeeded by his son, John II., a young man in his twenty-fifth year. Perhaps Columbus hoped from the adventurous daring of youth what he could not find in the prudence of the old King; at any rate, he laid his plans before the young ruler.

There was another reason why Columbus should be bolder in pressing his desires than before; there was an invention recently perfected which enabled the mariner to shape his course with more certainty, since by means of this instrument he could readily ascertain his distance from the equator. This was the astrolabe, which has since been discarded for the quadrant and sextant. It was intended to show the altitude of the sun, and by this means to fix the latitude.

It must be remembered that for a hundred years Portugal had been foremost in discovery and exploration: such had been the liberality of her rewards for successful navigators, that men of all nations had been attracted to her service; learned men had been gathered from all quarters to pass upon the value of the information which might be brought back by the daring sailors; and skilled cosmographers were busy at Lisbon making maps and charts which embodied this information. It might well be thought that this, of all others, was the country where Columbus, whose home had so long been within its borders, would meet with appreciation, and with that assistance which he sought.

So Columbus hoped, as he patiently awaited the decision of the King, who

had listened to him with the closest attention. The arguments of the navigator strongly impressed the royal mind; but when it came to proposing terms, the monarch recoiled from the adventurer with surprise and dismay: for Columbus, believing that he had a world to bestow, demanded rank and honor and wealth in exchange for it.

King John referred the matter to three persons who were in general charged with all matters relating to maritime discovery. These were two noted cosmographers, and the Bishop of Ceuta, who was also the King's confessor. These learned men heard all the arguments of Columbus, and returned their answer to the King: he was an extravagant and idle dreamer.

Still the King was not satisfied; he convoked his great council, composed of prelates and the most learned men in the kingdom; and laid before them the proposition which had been condemned by the three special advisers. Two views were taken of the subject of maritime discovery: the Bishop of Ceuta maintained that the country had enough to do without engaging in any more such ventures; his opponents replied that Portugal had won honor and glory and extended her dominion by this means, and should not hesitate to continue the work until a passage to India should be reached. But this passage to India was to be by way of the Cape, they thought: and the project of Columbus was almost wholly ignored.

Thus it had been condemned a second time: but still the King seemed to long to help him. Seeing this, the wily Bishop advised that means be taken to ascertain privately the value of the theory; should the King grant ships and men, and the adventurer turn out to have been but an idle dreamer, Portugal would be the laughing-stock of all who heard of it; but if a small expedition be sent out privately, it could be soon told what was the value of the idea, without committing the dignity of the crown: if it should turn out that Columbus was right, the King could, out of his royal generosity, reward him, though not, of course, at the extravagant rate which the adventurer had fixed. This advice suited the King very well; and Columbus was accordingly informed that the matter was still under consideration; that the King was not yet ready to give him a definite answer.

While he was yet awaiting the answer, he learned that some sailors, who had lately taken part in some mysterious expedition, were ridiculing him and his ideas. He resolved to search them out, and find what they really knew of the subject. He found them, and learned that they had been sent out by the King to see if there really was a path to India across the ocean: but storms had arisen; the ocean had proved impassable; they told of dreadful things opposing their further progress; and had been only too glad when the winds beat them back to the shores of Portugal.

We do not read that Columbus said anything to these sailors: only that he decided at once to leave Portugal. He declined positively to treat with

King John any further; though the King, when he saw that the poor adventurer who had asked his assistance was angry at the trick that had been played him, made some effort to detain him in Portugal still longer. Dona Felipa was dead; there was but one tie which still bound him to Portugal—his little son; but father and son could roam the world together. His resolve was soon taken. His brother Bartholomew was dispatched to England to seek for aid there; and secretly, lest he should be prevented by the King, or, as some authorities say, by his creditors, Columbus and his little son left Portugal, to return no more.

Of the countries of modern Europe, Russia was then almost unknown; certainly no one would think of journeying to its distant capital to ask help of its half-savage sovereign in any such enterprise. What is now Prussia was then a number of small independent states, frequently at war with each other. England was desolated by fifty years of civil war—the Wars of the Roses—which had just ended with the marriage of the heir of one line with the heiress of the other. King Henry VII. might render the wished-for aid, but Columbus seems to have had small hopes from this quarter. France was in a little more prosperous condition, though her King was much hampered by his nobles, who were more independent of him than he was of them. Italy consisted of a great number of small states, several of which he looked upon with hope, as not unlikely to give ships and men for this purpose. Spain was engaged in war with the Moors within her very borders; and hence could ill afford anything which would drain her treasury.

Italy was the most promising; and Columbus carried his plans there, submitting them to Venice again. But they were declined, on account of the critical state of affairs there. The poverty and unsettled condition of the other states warned him that what Venice would not, they could not give; and he went to Spain.

But it was not to the court. He laid his plan first before a wealthy noble, the Duke of Medina Celi, whose estates were like principalities, and whose retainers were an army in themselves. This powerful and wealthy noble listened with attention to the navigator, and saw how reasonable was the thing which he proposed. His kinsman, the Duke of Medina Sidonia, warned him that the promises which Columbus made were too splendid to be true, and that the stranger was only an Italian visionary; but he refused to be convinced of this. He entertained Columbus for some time in his house, and made himself thoroughly master of the project. He gave orders that four caravels which lay in his harbor of Port St. Mary should be made ready for sea; and it seemed to Columbus that he was on the very threshold of success.

Suddenly, however, the Duke changed his mind; he saw that the empire which Columbus promised to give the promoter of this enterprise was too

great for any subject to hold; perhaps he foresaw wars against his sovereigns, should he try to hold it; such wealth was too great for any but a sovereign prince. On the other hand, should Columbus fail, it would still be known at what he had aimed; and the Duke of Medina Celi would be an object of suspicion forever to his King and Queen, as having aspired to dominion which they had not given.

Columbus now determined to apply to France for help; but the Duke, disliking to see such advantages offered to a rival power before Spain had been allowed to decide upon them, wrote to the Queen, recommending it. A favorable reply was received, and Columbus was invited to the court.

Before the middle of the eleventh century, Sancho the Great, Emperor of Spain, had divided his dominions, at his death, among his four sons. Navarre remained an independent kingdom for a longer time than the others; Castile and Leon were re-united shortly after this division; Arragon remained apart. In addition to these kingdoms, there was another monarchy in Spain, which had grown up during the eighth century. The early Mohammedans had been possessed with a thirst for the conquest and conversion of the world; they had overrun many countries, offering the inhabitants the Koran or the sword; and one army of Arabs had even established themselves in Spain, making their capital at Cordova. There was war, nearly constant, between them and the various Christian kingdoms; but the latter, being unable to unite among themselves, even for the expulsion of the infidels from their country, did not accomplish as much as they might have done. But the Mohammedans were hard pressed, notwithstanding; and in time had to call to their assistance the Moors. The Arab kingdom, which had its capital at Cordova, was finally overthrown; but in its place was established a Moorish kingdom, with its capital at Granada.

The Christian kingdoms preserved a distinct existence, their fortunes varying with the character of their kings, until, in 1469, Isabella, the sister of the King of Castile and Leon, and heiress to its crown, married Ferdinand, heir of Arragon. When they succeeded to the crowns of the two kingdoms, the united realms were called Spain; but for some time each was independent sovereign of the hereditary kingdom. They were rulers, bound by the strictest kind of alliance, but Isabella was no more Queen of Arragon than Ferdinand was King of Castile and Leon. It is necessary to remind the reader of this, that we may understand more clearly the part which each of these two sovereigns took in the expedition which discovered America.

When Columbus first went to the court of Spain, he was the bearer of a letter from the Duke of Medina Celi, who asked, that since he had resigned the pleasure of this undertaking in favor of the royal pair, he might yet have a share in the expedition, should it be carried into effect, and the armament be fitted out from his port of St. Mary.



ISABELLA IN ARMOR.

But it was not a good time to solicit aid from the Spanish rulers; they had entered upon a war with the kingdom of Granada which was intended to be final; they would not cease until the Moors had been driven from Spain. Columbus arrived at Cordova, where the royal forces were encamped; and his arrival was made known to the sovereigns. By their command, he was given in charge to the treasurer of Castile, Alonzo de Quintanilla; but the Queen was too busily engaged in military preparations to receive him.

The scene was one which might have delighted any of the old romancers; the "marshalling in arms" meant the burnishing of spear and shield, the arraying of knights in full armor, mounted on horses cased in steel. The Queen herself wore a magnificent suit of plate armor, with an ermined mantle hanging from her shoulders, and the greaves half concealed beneath a flowing garment covered with the richest embroidery. Some few cannon there may have been, and a very few muskets of antique fashion; but they were almost as dangerous to the men who fired them as they were to those at whom they were aimed.

In the midst of all this glitter of shield and sword and spear, the churchmen mingled; some in the dark robes which we naturally associate with their calling, others in the more gorgeous costumes of the higher ranks, even to the scarlet of the cardinal. There was nothing brilliant, or striking, or magnificent, or romantic, that we connect with the idea of war in the middle ages, but what was present in this picture, as Columbus saw it, late in the spring of 1486.

The King marched off, to lay siege to a Moorish city; the Queen remained in Cordova, but so busily engaged in dispatching troops hither and thither, and sending military supplies where they were needed, that she had not a moment to devote to Columbus. Then she went to the very midst of the war, and remained there, superintending in person the movements of her armies. Returning to Cordova to celebrate their victories, which, however, were not yet conclusive, the two sovereigns were almost immediately called upon to go to a distant province, to suppress a rebellion which there threatened the crown. The royal pair passed the winter in Salamanca.

Meanwhile, Columbus was well entertained in the house of Quintanilla, where he made many friends for himself and his theories. Perhaps the most valuable of these friends were the Geraldini brothers, one of whom was the Pope's Nuncio, while the other was the preceptor of the younger children of Ferdinand and Isabella. It was during this time, also, that he became acquainted with Dona Beatrix Enriquez, the mother of his second son, Fernando, afterwards his biographer.

Columbus followed the court to Salamanca, and his friend Quintanilla made great efforts to obtain for him the friendship of Mendoza, Archbishop of Toledo, without whose advice the King and Queen did little of import-

ance. He was a man of sound judgment and quick understanding; and although he knew but little of the science of geography, readily gave audience to the *protege* of Quintanilla. At first, it seemed to him that the theory of Columbus was opposed to the direct statements of Scripture as to the form of the earth; but being convinced that this was not so, he admitted that there could be nothing wrong in seeking to extend the bounds of human knowledge. He was pleased with Columbus himself, whom he at once saw to be free from the vanity which attends the small mind, and wholly wrapped up in his subject. He saw that the navigator urged no wild dream, but a theory based on extensive knowledge and careful thought; and he consented to bring the matter to the attention of the sovereigns.



COLUMBUS IN THE ROYAL PRESENCE.

Probably Isabella was not present at the first interview which was granted Columbus by Ferdinand; one of his biographers distinctly says that he did



COLUMBUS BEFORE THE COUNCIL.

not see the Queen until the siege of Malaga, which took place some time after this interview; but although not admitted to an interview, he surely must have seen her while in Cordova. Be this as it may, Ferdinand received him, and listened, coolly and warily, to all that he had to say; reserving his decision with characteristic caution, until he had heard the opinions of the learned men of his kingdom. His ambition was excited by the thought of what might be done for Spain, were this dreamer to work out the fulfillment of his visions; and he foresaw that Portugal, which had labored so long to establish a road to India around the Cape of Good Hope, would be forestalled in her anticipations of commercial gains if this Genoese adventurer should succeed in finding a shorter, more direct passage across the Atlantic. Still, the opinions of the learned must be considered before the King could give any definite answer.

During the progress of the congress which was held at Salamanca for this purpose, Columbus was lodged and entertained with the magnificence due to a guest of the King, at the college convent of St. Stephen, a house of the great Dominican order. It was here that the conference was held; and the men gathered to decide the great question were mainly churchmen, since few of the laity had any learning.

“What a striking spectacle must the hall of the old convent have presented at this memorable conference! A simple mariner, standing forth in the midst of an imposing array of professors, friars, and dignitaries of the church; maintaining his theory with natural eloquence, and, as it were, pleading the cause of the New World. We are told that when he began to state the grounds of his belief, the friars of St. Stephen’s alone paid any attention to him; that convent being more learned in the sciences than the rest of the university. The others appear to have entrenched themselves behind one dogged position that, after so many profound cosmographers and philosophers had been studying the form of the world, and so many able navigators had been sailing about it for several thousand years, it was great presumption in an ordinary man to suppose that there remained such a vast discovery for him to make.”—*Irving*.

But there were other and more definite objections than this. We pass over some which will readily suggest themselves, as being reasonable in this time; and state a few of those which show the ignorance and prejudice of these learned men, chosen to assist the King with their knowledge:—

It is a piece of great foolishness to think that there can be such a thing as an antipode; can people walk with their feet upward, as flies cling to the ceiling of a room? Is there a part of the earth where the sky is beneath all, where rain and hail ascend, and where the trees grow downward with their branches? Certainly not, said these wise men; and shook their learned heads at Columbus.

Again, they quoted St. Augustine to prove that the ideas advanced by Columbus were in direct contradiction to the Scriptures. To maintain that there are inhabited lands across the ocean is to suppose that there are men who are not descended from Adam; since these supposed Aborigines could never have crossed the sea.

Again, the Bible says that the heavens are stretched about the earth like a tent; how could this be possible, and yet allow free passage around it? Certainly, the earth must be flat.

Those who maintained this knew considerably more of theology and such subjects than they did of geography. There were others, who were quite willing to admit that the earth is round, who yet had other objections to urge. One of these was, that the insufferable heat of the Torrid Zone would make it quite impossible to cross the ocean in the direction indicated. Even granting that this should be passed, they claimed that the circumference of the earth is so great that it would require three years to reach the land on the other side of the ocean—an error curiously differing from the error of Columbus, who supposed the earth to be smaller than it actually is.

Again, the Greek philosopher, Epicurus, was quoted to prove that only half of the world was habitable; that the sky extended over no more; and that the remainder was a waste of waters, a chaos, a gulf.

Others argued that even if a ship should succeed in reaching India, the return voyage would be impossible; for the waters would then rise like a kind of mountain, since the earth was round, and he could not be so foolish as to think of sailing up-hill.

It must have taxed the patience of Columbus to listen to such arguments as these, and reflect that the fate of his enterprise, so far as help from Spain was concerned, lay in the hands of men who knew so little about the subject. He kept his temper, however, and answered gravely and respectfully as the arguments were pressed: the sacred writers, he said, were speaking in figures adapted to the comprehension of men before science had made any advancement; the commentaries of the fathers, he contended, were not intended as scientific treatises, and hence it was unnecessary to speak of them, either to support or refute; he showed that the most illustrious of the ancient philosophers believed both hemispheres of the globe to be habitable, although separated from each other by that impassable Torrid Zone; but he had himself voyaged to the Gulf of Guinea, which is almost directly under the Equator, and could thus assure them from his own experience that the Torrid Zone abounded in fruits and population, instead of being uninhabitable.

But as he argued with them, he forgot the petty objections which they had urged, and poured forth such eloquence as they had never listened to before: and surely, outside of religion, no man ever had such a grand subject.

It may be said that he was not speaking wholly of the things of this world; for he called upon them as Christians to send the missionaries of the Cross to these millions awaiting them in far Cathay. A more sacred duty even than this, according to the ideas of the times, called them; the Holy Sepulchre was in the hands of the infidels; this scheme offered the means of redeeming it, and placing it once more within the control of Christian princes.

How many converts were made by this eloquence? We have the record of but one, Diego de Deza, then the professor of theology in the convent where the conference was held, and afterward Archbishop of Seville, a church dignitary of Spain who is second only to the Archbishop of Toledo. By his efforts many of the churchmen were brought to give the matter a more dispassionate hearing; he removed many of their prejudices, founded on a mistaken belief regarding the meaning of the Scriptures and the commentaries of the fathers: in short, he repeated, with all the force which only a churchman in good standing could give to an argument in that time, the reasoning which Columbus had already used, but which was not regarded from the lips of a layman. Thus in making one convert he made a host.

What was the result of the conference? It may be stated in a single word—nothing. Spite of the eloquence of Columbus, seconded as it was by that of Deza, there were too many narrow-minded, ignorant, prejudiced men in that assemblage, for the question to be fairly considered on its merits; and although there were several meetings, the decision was put off from time to time, until the court left Salamanca for Cordova, in preparation for the spring campaign.

We are not to understand that Columbus spent this waiting time idly, or even engaged in study; several times, during the course of the campaign, he would be summoned to attend a conference with the sovereigns, and would be led into the very heart of the country where the war was going on; but before he had reached the point designated, the fortunes of war would have carried the King or Queen to another place, and the conference would be indefinitely postponed.

The siege of Malaga took place between the spring and summer of 1487, the town surrendering in August. It was during this siege that a fanatic Moor tried to assassinate Ferdinand and Isabella, but mistook two of their courtiers for the persons of the King and Queen; the wounds, fortunately, were not fatal. The fortunes of Columbus were doubly imperilled by this act; for not only had Isabella, who afterward proved the friend that he sought, been threatened by the blow, but it had actually fallen upon the Marchioness of Moya, who pleaded his cause before the Queen when it came to be considered.

The campaign ended with the fall of Malaga, and the court returned to Cordova; but still the plans of Columbus were not to be considered by the

sovereigns. Just at the time when they might have had leisure to do so, the plague broke out in Cordova, and the court was driven from the city.

While he was thus engaged in following up a court which was continually moving from one place to another, and which found its sole interest in the war which it was prosecuting, Columbus received a letter from King John of Portugal, inviting him to return to Lisbon, and assuring him that he should not be molested by any suits of either a civil or criminal nature. What was the offense which Columbus had committed against the laws of Portugal it was impossible to determine; probably it was a debt which remained unpaid; for it will be remembered that long after this date there was such a thing as imprisonment for debt; and suits of this kind were sometimes converted into criminal prosecutions.

But no matter in what way he had rendered himself liable to the laws of Portugal, he evidently had no intention of returning to that country. King John had proved himself utterly untrustworthy, and Columbus declined the offer thus made him. He also received a letter from Henry VII. of England, which country his brother Bartholomew had reached after long delay, holding out promises of encouragement.

Probably these things reached the ears of King Ferdinand, and he saw that something must be done to prevent Columbus from accepting the offers. Certainly he summoned the navigator to appear before a conference of learned men, to be held in the city of Seville; a royal order was issued, providing for his lodging and entertainment in that city; the Castilian treasurer had been directed to pay him a certain sum of money, probably to provide for his expenses to the city of Seville; and the magistrates of all towns through which he might pass were commanded to furnish him with entertainment, since the miserable inns did not afford fitting accommodations.

But again, as so often before, the conference was delayed by war. This time, however, we find Columbus, not patiently following the court about, and waiting for a hearing, but actually "fighting, giving proofs of the distinguished valor which accompanied his wisdom and his lofty desires."

His religious ardor received new strength during the course of this campaign. Two friars of the convent established in Jerusalem, came as messengers to Ferdinand and Isabella, to tell what threats the Grand Soldan of Egypt had made, if the Spanish sovereigns did not end their war against the Mohammedans of Spain. He would put to death all the Christians in his dominions, raze their churches and convents, and utterly destroy the Holy Sepulchre and all other places esteemed sacred by the Christians.

It was impossible for the Spaniards to give up the war; for it had come to be a question of life and death between the Moorish and the Christian kingdoms; it was impossible for both to continue in Spain. Isabella, however,

granted a perpetual annual gift of a thousand ducats in gold for the maintenance of the convent, and sent a veil embroidered by herself to be hung before the shrine; then, dismissing the friars, turned to the prosecution of the war again.

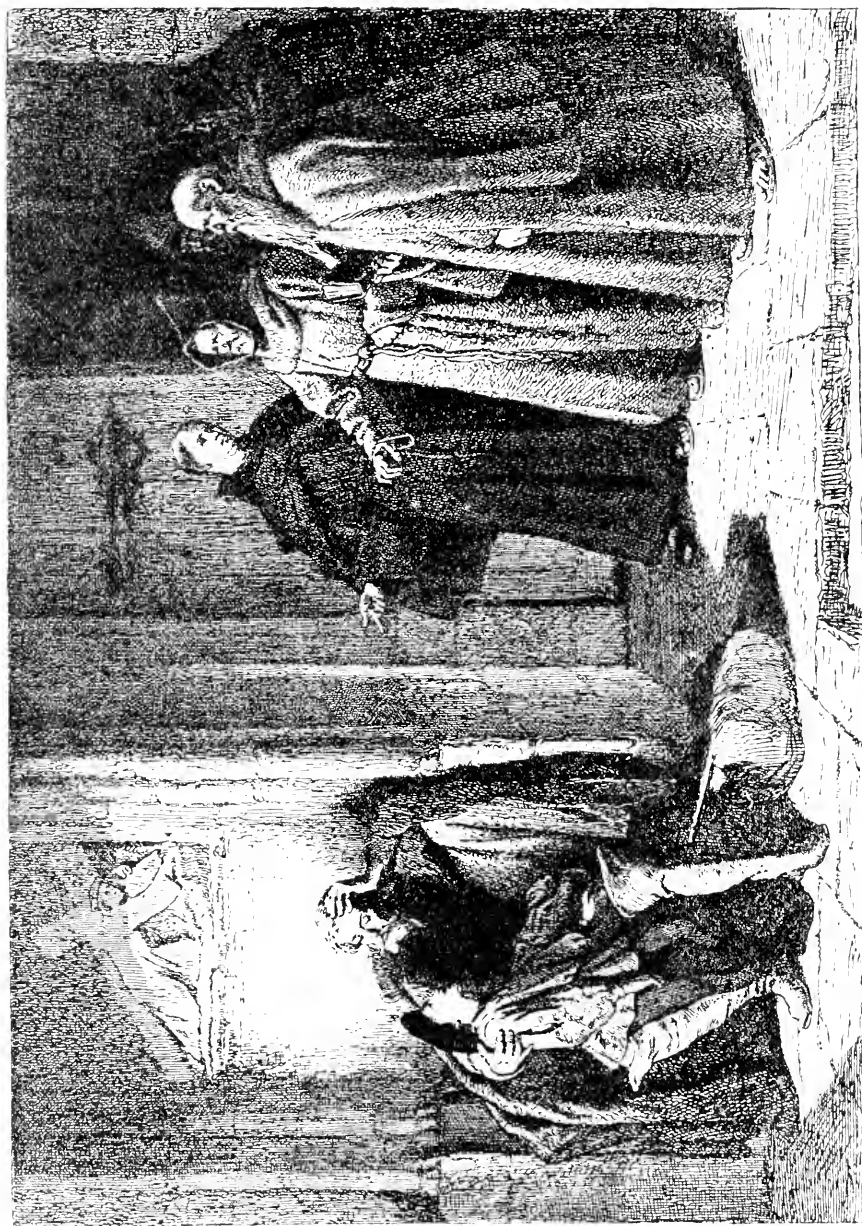
But their coming, and the message which they brought, had a great effect upon the minds of many soldiers of high rank; and particularly was Columbus affected by it; it was a new and stronger proof than ever of the need of finding the rich regions of the east, and bringing home treasure enough to purchase the Holy Sepulchre from the heathen who so persecuted Christians.

Again we find a similar series of events filling the next year. Finally, in the spring of 1491, Columbus determined that he would wait no longer; he pressed for a reply to his suit. With some difficulty, the King was persuaded to tell Bishop Talavera that the learned men who had been so long in conference must render their decision. Their answer was ready, after some delay, and the King was gravely informed that the proposed scheme was vain and impossible, and that it did not become such great princes to engage in an enterprise of the kind on such weak grounds as had been advanced.

Not all the members of the conference agreed in this report, however; there was what, in modern parlance, is called a minority report as well; and this, fortunately for Columbus, was rendered by Fray Diego de Deza, tutor to Prince Juan, who had access to the ear of the King and Queen when others were denied. But the most favorable answer that even this suitor could obtain was a message that the expenses of the long war had been so great that the King and Queen could not now engage in any new enterprise demanding money and men.

Disheartened at this message, Columbus repaired to court, to learn from Ferdinand and Isabella themselves if this was really the answer they meant to give him, after keeping him waiting their pleasure for so many years. When he found that it was so, he thought that it was but a polite way of telling him that they considered his schemes impracticable and visionary, and that they consequently had no intention of assisting him. He accordingly resolved that he would leave Spain at once, and seek in the court of France the aid which had been refused him by the Most Catholic King.

Before he went, however—and a journey from Spain to France was something of an undertaking then—he must see and talk with Don Pedro Correa, who, it will be remembered, had married one of the Perestrello sisters, and was therefore, by courtesy, brother-in-law to Columbus; and who had been one of those who communicated to the future discoverer what signs of land to the west of the ocean had been perceived, from time to time, by those acquainted with the western islands. He set out on foot; for his stock of money, never large, must be carefully husbanded; he could not tell when he should have any more.



COLUMBUS AND HIS SON AT THE MONASTERY GATE.

He was not alone on this journey: his son Diego, who was probably not more than fifteen years old, accompanied him: three-year-old Fernando, we may conjecture, remained in Cordova with his mother. We may easily imagine the picture—father and son toiling along the lonely road from Seville to Huelva, near the little seaport of Palos de Moguer.

Half a league outside the walls of the last-named town, there is still standing an ancient convent of the Franciscan order, dedicated to Santa Maria de Rabida. Before its gates, one day four hundred years ago, a stranger, leading a boy by the hand, stopped, and asked for some bread and water for the child. There was nothing unusual in the request: for at that time there were no inns of any kind: and the traveler expected to find lodging and food in the castle or the convent. The request was granted as a matter of course: and while the child ate and drank, the prior of the convent, who chanced by, entered into a conversation with the father, whose plain garments did not conceal the evident distinction of the wearer.

The prior had taken much interest in geographical and nautical science: for the seaport of Palos sent many enterprising navigators out to explore unknown paths upon the ocean: but the stranger opened a new line of thought to him. India could be reached by sailing westward across the ocean, and there were no insuperable difficulties in the way—that was the wonderful idea which the stranger unfolded to the prior, Juan Perez de Marchena.

But the wanderer had more to tell than that he had conceived this idea. He told of long and patient waiting for help from the sovereigns of Spain, and their decision that the fulfillment of his hopes from them must be indefinitely postponed: and he told the prior how, disappointed, but not wholly disheartened, sure that the truth which he alone saw would be apparent to others could he but point it out, he was now on his way to the court of France, to offer to Charles VIII. the wonderful things which Ferdinand and Isabella had refused to accept from him.

The good prior was dismayed to find that these things were to be lost to Spain: it must be that the petition of Columbus had not been rightly presented. He knew of a power which he himself possessed: he had once been confessor to Queen Isabella, and knew that he could reach her ear at any time. But before he ventured to appeal to her—and his caution shows why the appeal was listened to when it was made—he determined not to trust altogether to his own judgment, which might have been led astray by the wonderful eloquence of the stranger. He accordingly detained Columbus and his son as his guests, and sent for his friend, Garcia Fernandez, a physician of Palos.

Fernandez came: and Columbus again explained his belief and aims. Like the prior, the physician was impressed by the boldness and originality of the

mariner; and listened eagerly to all that he had to say. But other friends must be found for him; the question must be submitted to the judgment of practical sailors, many of whom were to be found in Palos. Several veterans of the sea were invited to the convent, to talk with the mariner who had lately come there; one of these was Martin Alonzo Pinzon, the head of a family of rich and experienced seamen, who had made many adventurous expeditions.

Remembering how the Portuguese had won fame and wealth by voyages of discovery along the African coast, these experienced mariners saw no reason why, under the leadership of a man daring and original enough to plan and lead such an expedition, new worlds might not be opened up in another direction. What had been to churchmen a stumbling-block, and to philosophers foolishness, was to these practical, brave and generous sailors the highest wisdom. Pinzon, particularly, was so impressed with the genius of Columbus, that he offered to take part in such an expedition when it should be organized; and in the meantime, if Columbus would but renew his application to the Spanish court, to defray the expenses connected with doing so.

The prior begged Columbus to remain in the convent until an answer could be received from the Queen; and dispatched a letter to her by a trusty messenger. It was not difficult to prevail upon Columbus to stay; for he dreaded to be put off in France as he had already been in Spain.

The Queen was at Santa Fe; and the messenger required only fourteen days for the journey of something like four hundred miles from Palos and return. Isabella had always been more favorably disposed toward Columbus than the wary and cold Ferdinand; and she now wrote kindly, bidding Perez come to court, leaving Christopher Columbus in confident hope until he should hear further from her. The prior at once set out, late at night as it was when the messenger returned; and alone, riding his good mule, the steed which the ideas of the day assigned to churchmen, he traversed the conquered territory of Granada, and entered the presence of the Queen.

The friar pleaded the cause of Columbus eloquently and fearlessly. Before this time, it is probable that Isabella had never heard the case fully stated; for it is Ferdinand whom we find active in receiving the reply of the learned conference, and deciding upon the case. The Queen listened with such interest that Perez felt great hopes of the result, even before she commanded Columbus to return to court; and, with a true womanly attention to details, ordered that a sum equal, at the present day, to about three hundred dollars of United States money, be sent him for the expenses of the journey.

The arrival of Columbus at the Spanish court was marked by what the men of that day considered one of the most important events in the history of Spain—the final downfall of the Mohammedan power in that country,

and the surrender of the capital city of the Moors, Granada, to Ferdinand and Isabella. It was indeed an eventful time when Columbus arrived, for he came to offer still more extended empire, and multiplied wealth, to Spain; he came, bringing in his hands the gift of a New World.

We shall not dwell, as Irving does, upon the glittering magnificence of the scene of surrender at Granada; nor upon the rejoicings which followed it. Columbus obtained a hearing, and commissioners were appointed to consider the case. But his demands appeared to them exorbitant; this penniless foreign adventurer demanded that he should be created admiral and viceroy of the provinces which he should discover, and receive one-tenth of all gains, either by trade or conquest. The proud Spanish nobles looked coldly upon the man who sought to raise himself to their rank, and remarked that it was a shrewd arrangement which he wished to make; having nothing to lose, he demanded, in case of success, rank, honor and enormous wealth. Columbus, nettled by the sneer, promptly offered to defray one-eighth of the cost of the expedition, if he might enjoy one-eighth of the profits. He had friends in Palos, he knew, who believed in him and his enterprise; and Martin Alonzo Pinzon, if all others failed him, would bear him out in this proposition to the royal commissioners.

By Talavera's advice, the Queen declined to accept his terms; and offered conditions which, while more moderate, were yet advantageous and honorable; but Columbus would not yield an inch; and mounting a mule which he had bought for the journey from Palos to Santa Fe, he rode forth again, once more to seek the French court.

But although Columbus had failed to convince Ferdinand and his more generous, enthusiastic wife, he had made many friends about the court who appreciated his powers of mind to the full. One of these was Luis de St. Angel, receiver of the ecclesiastical revenues of Arragon. Like others of high rank and place, he was filled with dismay at seeing the great man depart from Spain, to throw into the lap of another country what had been wantonly rejected by Arragon and Castile; and he had the courage to tell Isabella what he thought. He pictured not only the enormous addition to her revenue and dominions, as well as her fame among rulers; but he told, with impassioned fervor, of the religious aspect of the enterprise. He painted the millions in the realms of Kublai Khan, waiting eagerly to receive the gospel; and then prophesied of the honor in which they would hold the name of her who should carve out a path for the missionaries of the Cross to reach them. He showed what more this discovery might do for the exaltation of the Church; how the boundless riches of Cathay would buy the Holy Sepulchre from the Mohammedans, and the most sacred spots on earth be forever free to the feet of the pilgrim. He told her how sound and practicable were the plans of Columbus; that they had received the endorse-

ment of veteran mariners; and that he was no idle visionary, but a man of wide scientific knowledge and sound practical judgment. He told her that failure would bring no disgrace upon her; for it was the business of princes to investigate such great questions as this; and then informed her that the expense of the expedition, of which so much had been said, would amount to no more than two vessels and about two thousand-crowns.

Isabella listened with renewed interest; but Ferdinand was at her side, ready to oppose any such unwise scheme. The war had drained the treasury of the united kingdoms; they must wait until it had been replenished. But Isabella was too deeply interested in the advancement of the Church; though she was the wife of Ferdinand, she was also Queen-Regnant of Castile and Leon, a kingdom equal in importance and wealth to Arragon.

"I undertake the enterprise," she answered St. Angel, after a short interval of suspense, "for my own crown of Castile, and will pledge my jewels to raise the money for it."

It is because of this speech on the part of the Queen that the famous verse reads:—

"To Castile and Leon Columbus gave a new world."

Ferdinand had neither part nor lot in the enterprise. It is true that Isabella did not find it necessary to pledge her jewels to raise the necessary funds; that the sum required was taken from the treasury of Arragon; for that was not so emptied by the war as the King had implied; but the credit of the kingdom of Castile and Leon was pledged to repay this debt, and it was afterward repaid in full.

Columbus had journeyed about two leagues—six miles—on his way back to Palos, thence to France, when this decision was reached. It was not known whether he had actually set out or not; but when this was found to be the case, a courier was dispatched to summon him back to Santa Fe. He did not return without hesitation; for his hopes had been raised often before this; but he was told that the Queen had now positively promised to undertake the enterprise; and his doubts thus removed, he turned his mule's head once again toward Santa Fe, and joyfully retraced his steps.

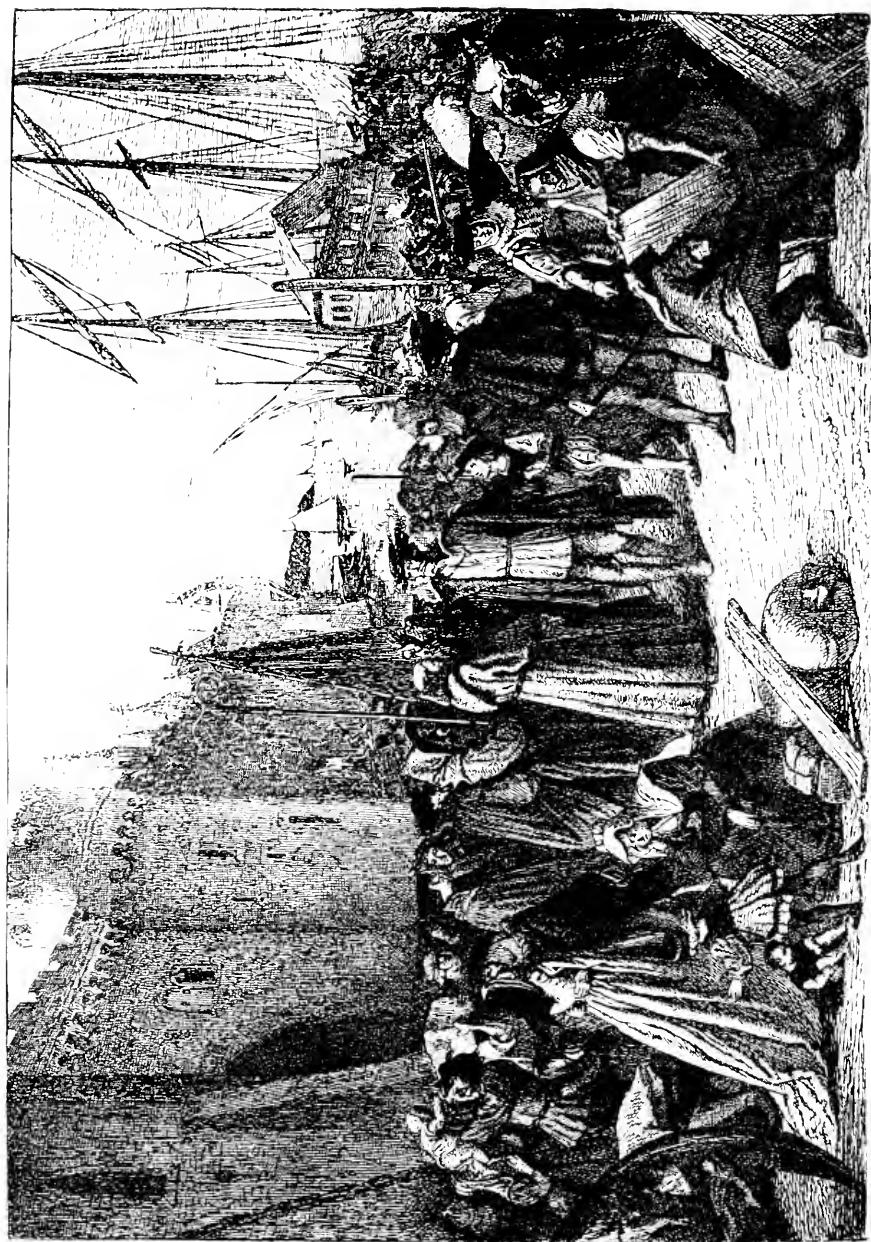
The articles of agreement drawn up provided that Columbus should have for himself and his heirs, forever, the office of admiral, viceroy, and governor-general over all lands which he might discover; that he should be entitled to one-tenth of all revenues from these lands, in whatever way obtained; and that he should, at any time, be entitled to contribute one-eighth of the expense of fitting out vessels, and receive one-eighth of the profits.

In accordance with this last-named privilege, Columbus, with the aid of Pinzon, added a third vessel to the armament of two which Isabella furnish-

ed. These articles were signed by Ferdinand and Isabella, April 17, 1492; for although Isabella bore the whole expense, the expedition was under the patronage of the united sovereigns of Spain; and the signatures stand side by side on this important document: "I, the King," "I, the Queen."

A letter of privilege, or commission, was granted to Columbus the last of the same month; confirming the offices mentioned to him and his heirs, and authorizing the use of the title *Don* by him and his descendants. A little later than this, the Queen issued letters-patent; appointing his son Diego a page in the household of her son, Prince Juan. This was an honor usually shown only to boys of high rank; and was thus a marked compliment to the Genoese traveler.

May 12, 1492, Columbus set out for Palos, to make ready the vessels for his expedition. He was now in the fifty-sixth year of his age; eighteen years had passed since the plan was matured in his own mind so far that he was ready to ask the advice of the learned Florentine: fully half of that time had been spent in waiting the convenience of the great ones of earth; but at last he who was really great was to venture his all upon three small vessels, scarcely sea-worthy.



DEPARTURE OF COLUMBUS FROM PALOS, SPAIN.

CHAPTER III.

THE FIRST VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

New Difficulties—Reluctant Seamen—The Three Vessels—A Town of Mourning—Sets Sail from Palos—Alarms—The Double Reckoning—Variation of the Compass—the Grassy Sea—Renewed Doubts—Indications of Land—Mutiny of the Crew—Hope Renewed—Confidence in Columbus—Night-Watch of the Admiral—Light Through the Darkness—"LAND!"—The Landing of the Discoverer—Taking Possession—The Natives—Cruising—Self-Deception—Exploration of Cuba—Two Wonderful Plants—Desertion of the *Pinta*—Hayti Discovered—Visits from Native Chiefs—Guacanagari—The *Santa Maria* Wrecked—Assisted by Natives—Tribute of Columbus to their Character—The Indians' First Acquaintance with Firearms—Envious Indians—Colony Projected—Efforts to Convert the Indians—Building the Fortress—Instructions to Colonists—Departure of Columbus—Rejoined by the *Pinta*—Explanations—Armed Natives—Hostilities—Difficulties of Return Voyage—Storms—Piety of the Crew—Causes of the Admiral's Distress—His Precautions—Land Once More—Enmity of Portuguese—Liberated Prisoners—Departure—Storms Again—Off the Coast of Portugal—Reception in Portugal—The King's Advisers—Rejoicing at Palos—Arrival of the *Pinta*—Pinzon's Treachery—His Death—Reception of Columbus at Court—Unparalleled Honors—Royal Thanksgiving—Jealousy of Courtiers—Columbus and the Egg—The Papal Bull—Preparations for a Second Voyage—Various Arrangements—The Golden Prize of Columbus.

THE port of Palos had committed some offense against the sovereigns; in punishment for which it had been sentenced to furnish two caravels for royal use, for the period of one year. These were the vessels assigned for the use of Columbus, and he was empowered to procure and fit out a third vessel, at his own expense, in accordance with the terms of the agreement.

Having reached Palos, and again become the guest of Fray Perez, Columbus proceeded to the most public place in the town, the porch of the church of St. George; and having caused the authorities and many of the inhabitants to assemble there, read to them the royal order that they should, within ten days, furnish him with the two caravels for the service of the Crown. The crews were to receive the ordinary wages of seamen, payable four months in advance; and the strictest orders were given in regard to the furnishing of such supplies as Columbus might require.

Weeks passed, and not a vessel could be procured, nor a sailor to man it had one been found. Then a royal order was issued, and an officer of the royal household detailed to see that it was executed: any vessel belonging to Spanish subjects might be pressed into the service, and the masters and crews obliged to sail with Columbus wherever he might give orders.

After the necessary ships were secured, and the men engaged, there were many difficulties arising. The men employed to caulk the vessels, for instance, did their work so badly that they were ordered to do it over again; whereupon they disappeared from Palos. Some of those who had volunteered after the Pinzons had set the example, repented of what they had done, and deserted and hid. Had it not been for the example and influence of the Pinzons, Columbus would probably have found it impossible to fit out even the modest armament which he had required.

The *Santa Maria* was prepared especially for the expedition, and was the only one of the vessels that was decked. It was commanded by Columbus himself. The *Pinta* was commanded by Martin Alonso Pinzon, and had his brother Francisco as pilot; the *Nina* was under the authority of Vicente Yanez Pinzon. There were three pilots besides Pinzon, a number of officers of the Crown, including a royal notary, who went along to take official notes of all transactions, a surgeon, some private adventurers, and ninety mariners—a total of one hundred and twenty persons.

Before setting sail, each one, from Columbus to the meanest sailor, confessed himself and partook of the sacrament. They were looked upon by their kinsmen and friends as doomed men; Palos was a town of mourning; for nearly every household had some member or friend engaged in this dreadful enterprise. Nor was this feeling confined to those who remained on shore; it was fully shared by the sailors themselves; and when, half an hour before sunrise on the morning of Friday, August 3, 1492, the little fleet sailed from the harbor of Palos, there was but one man on board who felt any certainty that they would ever see Spain again.

Not three days had passed before Columbus had evidence of the ill-will of those who had furnished the expedition. On the third day out, the *Pinta* made signals of distress; and it was found that her rudder was broken. It was clearly due to the contrivance of her owners, who had thus tried to disable their vessel so that she might be left behind. Pinzon, who commanded the *Pinta*, secured the rudder with cords until the following day; when, the wind having lulled, the other ships lay to while the necessary temporary repairs were being made.

But the vessel proved to be leaky; and Columbus decided that they should put in at the Canary Islands until she should be repaired; return to Spain he was resolved that he would not. The pilots had asserted that the Canaries were far distant from the point where the injuries of the *Pinta* were discovered; but Columbus differed from them. The event proved that he was right; and this added somewhat to their opinion of his knowledge and abilities.

This new confidence in him enabled him to pacify the sailors when they became alarmed at seeing the volcano of Teneriffe sending forth flame and

smoke. He recalled the examples of Etna and Vesuvius, which were well-known to them, and thus allayed their fears. But he himself became alarmed when he found that a Portuguese fleet had been seen hovering off the Canaries; he suspected the wily King of Portugal, who had thrown away his own chances of engaging in this great work of discovery, of being anxious to revenge himself upon Columbus for having entered the service of Spain. The Admiral, as Columbus may now be called, accordingly gave hasty orders that his ships should be put to sea at once.

It was the morning of September 6 when they saw the heights of Ferro gradually fade into a dim blue line upon the horizon, and knew that an unexplored ocean lay before them. As the sun rose higher, their hearts sank lower, and all three ships were filled with the complainings and lamentations of the sailors. Many of the most rugged were not ashamed to shed tears because of the land which, as they thought, they had left behind them forever. It required all the eloquence of Columbus to sooth them, even partially, with glowing word-pictures of the riches and magnificence of the countries to which he was conducting them.

Columbus gave strict orders that, should the vessels by any mischance be separated, each should continue its course due westward: providing, that when they had gone seven hundred leagues, they should lay by from midnight until dawn, each night; for that was the distance at which he expected to find land. It was now that he resorted to his stratagem of concealing from the crew the true distance from Europe; keeping two reckonings, one of which, intended for his own guidance, was correct; the other, published to the crews of the three vessels, considerably less than the truth.

They had sailed five days after leaving the Canaries when they fell in with a spar, evidently part of the rigging of a vessel much larger than any of their own. This did not tend to raise the spirits of the men, but was rather an indication of the fate which had befallen others, and which they might expect.

Two days after this, Columbus noticed that the needle of the compass, hitherto considered an unfailing guide, no longer pointed exactly to the north. This appears to have occasioned some alarm even to his courageous soul; and he observed it attentively for three days, during which time the variation became greater and greater. At the end of that period, it was noticed by one of the pilots; and from him the alarm spread to his comrades, thence to the others.

It was a fortunate thing that Columbus should have observed this so long before the others discovered it; for he had opportunity to consider the case, and reason out a theory to account for it. When the pilots, then, acquainted him with their discovery, he assured them that the pole star is not a fixed point, but revolves around the pole like other stars; and thus the



COLUMBUS WATCHING FOR LAND.

needle of the compass is subject to variations. Ignorant as they were, they had a high opinion of his ability as an astronomer, and accepted this explanation. Columbus seems to have been well pleased with it himself; and there is no reason to suppose that he ever held any other theory regarding the variation of the needle.

The next day they saw what they believed to be certain indications of land. Two birds of different species, neither of which they supposed would be found far from land, hovered about the ships. The next night, a great flame of fire, as Columbus describes it in his journal—presumably a meteor—fell from the sky about four or five leagues away.

As they sailed along, borne by the trade-winds through a sea of glass, they saw the surface of the water flecked, here and there, with great patches of sea-weed. These increased in number and size as they advanced; and Columbus recalled the accounts of certain mariners who were said to have been driven far to the west of the Canaries, and found themselves in the mist of a sea covered with great patches of weeds, resembling sunken islands. Some of these weeds were yellow and withered, while others were quite fresh and green; and on one patch a live crab was found.

Up to the eighteenth of September this favoring weather continued; and the sea, to use the words of Columbus, was as calm as the Guadalquivir at Seville. Great enthusiasm prevailed among his followers, lately so filled with fear; each ship tried to keep in advance of the others, and each sailor hoped to deserve the pension of ten thousand *maravedis* which had been promised to the first who saw land.

September 19, Martin Alonzo Pinzon, whose vessel was in the lead, hailed the *Santa Maria*, and informed Columbus that from the flight of a great number of birds and from the appearance of the sky, he thought there was land to the north. But Columbus refused to turn from the course which he had marked out; he knew that land was to be reached by sailing due west, and in no other direction would he go. Every sailor knows how deceptive are the clouds, particularly at sunset; and he felt sure that Pinzon was but the victim of such an illusion as often deceives those on the lookout for land.

As the enthusiasm of the sailors began to die down, doubts of the Admiral took its place; and they thought that they should never see home again. It is true that there had been many signs of land; but these had now been observed for many days, and still there was no land to be seen. Even the favoring wind became a cause for alarm; on a sea where the wind was forever from the east, how were they ever to sail away from the dreaded west?

But the next day the wind veered, and there was a faint gleam of hope; small birds were also observed, singing, as if their strength was not exhausted by their flight from the land where they had nested.

The next day, there was no wind; but the ships were in the midst of fields of weeds, which covered the surface of the water, and impeded the progress which might have been made had there been any wind. They began to recall some vague traditions which had reached even their untutored ears, about the lost Atlantis, and the sea made impassable by the submerged land.

Their fears were not borne out, however, by the soundings; for a deep-sea line showed no bottom.

Columbus was kept busy arguing against their fears: for as fast as one was allayed, another would take its place. If there was wind, they feared a storm; if there was none, they were forever becalmed; if there were no signs of land, they knew that they should never return; if there were signs of land, they had been so often deceived that they could not trust again. One great source of alarm was the calmness of the sea, even when there was wind; and Columbus could not convince them that this was due to the presence of a large body of land in the quarter whence the wind blew; which had not, therefore, sufficient space to raise great waves in the ocean. Finally, on Sunday, September 25, there was a great swell of the sea, without any wind; and the sailors were reassured by this phenomenon, as by something familiar to them of old. Columbus piously regarded it as a special miracle wrought to allay the rising clamors of his crew.

But this was only temporary relief; the discontent among the crew continued, and they resolved that they would go no farther. They had now advanced far beyond the limit reached by other seamen, and would certainly be entitled to much respect from their acquaintances should they return at once. As for Columbus, he had few friends, for he was but a foreigner anyhow; and even if they felt that they could not rely upon the many persons of influence who had opposed this enterprise, and who would be glad to learn that it had failed, they could easily get rid of the Admiral. If they took back the story that he had fallen overboard one night, while busy with his instruments and the stars, who but those who threw him into the sea were to know that the tale was not true?

The wind again became favorable, and the ships were enabled to keep so close together that a conversation could be maintained between the commanders of the *Santa Maria* and the *Pinta*. While this was the state of affairs, and Columbus was busily studying a chart about which they had been talking, Martin Alonzo Pinzon suddenly cried out:—

“Land! Land! Senor, I claim my reward!”

As he spoke, he pointed toward the southwest, where there was indeed an appearance of land. So strong were the indications, that even Columbus was deceived; and yielding to the insistence of the crews, gave orders that the three vessels should sail in the direction indicated by Pinzon. Morning came, after a night of much excitement and hopeful pressage, and showed

that what Pinzon had beheld, was but "the baseless fabric of a vision," a sunset cloud which had passed away during the night. This occurred September 25: and from this time forward, the sailors appear to have been somewhat more hopeful: indeed, so frequently was the cry of "Land" uttered that Columbus found it necessary to rule that if any one gave such notice, and land was not discovered within three days thereafter, he should forfeit all title to the reward, even should he afterward be the first to see land.

By the first of October, according to the belief of the crew, they had reached a point five hundred and eighty-four leagues west of the Canary Islands; Columbus knew that they were in reality seven hundred and seven leagues from those islands, but he still kept this knowledge to himself.

October 7, it was thought by those on board the *Nina* that land lay in the west; and that vessel crowded all sail to follow the indications; for no one dared give notice to the Admiral, for fear of losing the reward. Pressing forward, it was not long before a flag was hoisted at the masthead of the little ship, and a gun boomed over the waters—the preconcerted signal that land had been seen. As before, Columbus fell upon his knees, and repeated the *Gloria in Excelsis*, in which he was joined by all his crew.

But the end was not yet; as the *Nina* confidently advanced, to follow up the great discovery, with the other vessels close in her wake, it was seen that there was no cause for exultation. Again the fancied land was seen to be nothing but a cloud on the horizon; and the flag which had been hoisted in such proud anticipation was slowly and regretfully hauled down.

On the evening of this day, he determined to alter slightly the course to which he had held so rigidly, and proceed to the west-south-west. This was in accordance with the repeated solicitations of the Pinzons, and with his own recently conceived idea that there might have been some mistake in calculating the latitude of Cipango. The fleet kept this course for three days.

It was the night of the tenth of October when the long repressed mutiny of the crew broke forth. Their fears were no longer to be controlled, and they demanded that the Admiral should at once return to Spain. It was in vain that he urged what signs of land appeared daily; they replied, surlily, that such had been seen a month before, and still the watery horizon was unbroken by anything but clouds. It is said that Columbus promised them that if land were not discovered within three days, he would consent to return: but there appears to be no good authority for this story, which was probably invented to satisfy those who love to hear of marvelous coincidences. Nor does it seem likely that Columbus, who had persevered for eighteen years in seeking help to fit out this armament, should have been willing, after a voyage of but little more than two months, to compromise matters in this way. The story rests upon the testimony of a single historian, who is accused of many inaccuracies in other respects.

Finding soothing words and fair promises of no avail, Columbus was obliged to use a more decided tone. He told them that the expedition had been sent by the King and Queen to seek the Indies; and that whatever might be the result, he was determined to persevere, until, by God's blessing, he should have fulfilled their commands.



THE MUTINY.

Having no answer ready to oppose to these resolute words, the men drew away from the leader. We may imagine how they hung together in little knots, muttering deep curses against the folly of the man who had brought them thither, and almost wailing in their grief because they would never see their country again. How often during that night the old scheme of throwing Columbus into the sea was brought up, how often they debated whether

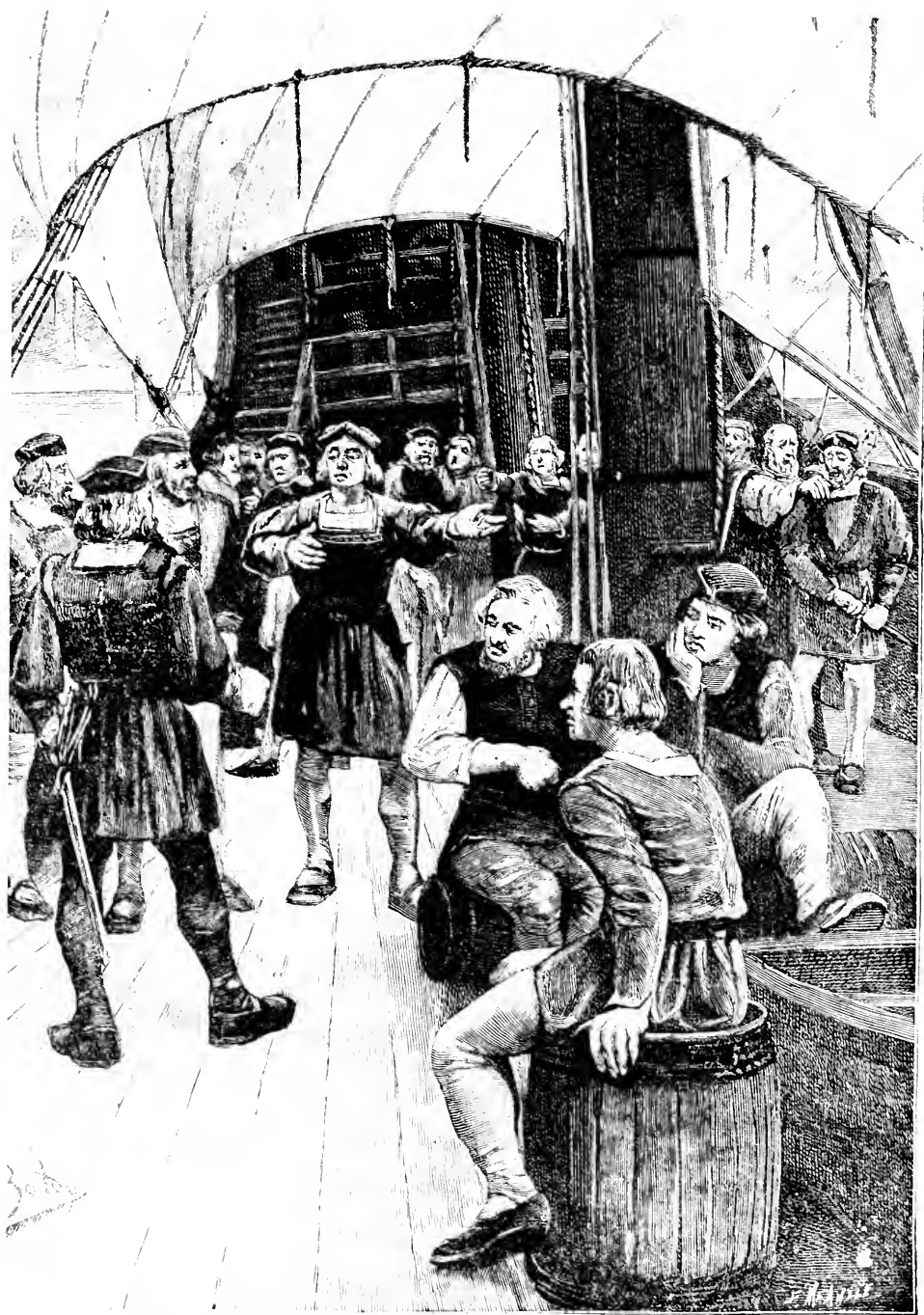
or not they might not keep him a prisoner until Spain was reached, how often they reckoned over their grievances and many causes for fear, no man knows. Morning found them sullen and despairing; their commander was still defiant.

But as the day went on, those signs of land, which the sailors justly said had been seen so long as to be completely misleading, became more and more certain; fresh weeds, such as grow in rivers, were seen on the surface of the water; then a branch of thorn with berries on it; and finally, a reed, a small board and a staff of carved wood. Their gloom and rebellious feeling gave place to hope; and they were eagerly on the watch throughout the day.

At sunset, the crew, according to their custom, sang the *Salve Regina*: after which Columbus addressed them again. He pointed out to them the goodness of God, who had given them, throughout their perilous voyage, favoring breezes and a summer sea; he reminded them that when they left the Canaries, he had given orders that after proceeding seven hundred leagues to the west, they should not sail after midnight—a proof, as he told them, that he had not gone farther than he had then thought it would be necessary. He told them that he thought it probable, from the indications seen that day, that they would make land that very night; and he gave orders that a vigilant look-out should be kept from the fore-castle of each vessel; and he promised, in addition to the pension given by the sovereigns, to give a velvet doublet to the first who should discover land.

As the evening closed in, Columbus took his station on the top of the castle or cabin on the high poop of his vessel, and kept an unwearied watch for land. Throughout the number of followers, there was the same excitement, greater than had ever before prevailed, even over the false alarms given by the Pinzons; for now the Admiral himself, for the first time, was confident that they were approaching land. The very failures of the others gave strength to their trust in Columbus; and they forgot their rebellious clamor of the previous night.

It was about ten o'clock when Columbus first thought he saw a light glimmering at a great distance—could it indeed be land? Literally, he could not believe his own eyes; but fearing that his hopes deceived him, he called to Pedro Gutierrez, a gentleman of the King's bedchamber, and asked him if he saw a light. The adventurer replied that he did; but still Columbus was not convinced. Rodrigo Sanchez was called, and the same question was asked him; he answered that he saw none; and both Columbus and Gutierrez saw that the light had disappeared. But in a moment more they saw it gleam forth again; and it continued to waver thus, as if it were a torch in a boat that was tossed on the waves or carried from one hut to another on shore. So uncertain was it, that the others were inclined to doubt its reality;



COLUMBUS ADDRESSING HIS MEN DURING THE MUTINY

but Columbus, once assured that it was not a fiction of his excited imagination, considered these gleams of light as a certain sign that they were approaching an inhabited land.

Contrary to the orders which he had given on leaving the Canaries, they did not pause during the night. It was two o'clock when a gun from the *Pinta* gave the signal that land was actually descried. It was about two leagues away, and had first been descried by a mariner named Rodrigo de Triana; but the pension was adjudged to Columbus himself, as having seen the light four hours before the signal was given from the smaller vessel.

For more than three weary hours they lay to, the waves gently rocking the adventurous barks on the smooth warm waters. As day dawned, the discoverer saw before him a level island, well-wooded, and apparently several leagues in area. The supposition of Columbus that they were approaching inhabited land proved to be correct; for the dusky inhabitants thronged the shore and stood gazing in wonder at the ships.

The vessels had come to anchor; and Columbus, attired in a rich suit of scarlet, befitting the dignity of the Admiral and Viceroy of India, entered this boat, while the two Pinzons entered those belonging to the vessels which they commanded. Each boat bore a banner on which was a green cross and the initials of the sovereigns Ferdinand and Isabella, surmounted by a crown imperial.

What effect did this splendor of color and glitter of armor produce upon the natives? When they first saw the ships, so huge in comparison with their own slight canoes, they had been filled with wonder; as the day dawned, they beheld the vessels more plainly, and that they were borne along, apparently without effort, while the great white sails seemed to them like wings. As the boats were launched, and came toward the shore, their astonishment was changed into terror of the strangers; and they fled into the woods.

Meantime, Columbus had landed; and kneeling upon the earth, he kissed the soil of that new world which he had been first to discover, surrounded by his now devoted followers. Then he rose and drew his sword, and solemnly took possession of the newly discovered country in the name of the sovereigns of Castile. He then called upon all his followers to take the oath of allegiance to him, as Viceroy and Admiral, the representative of these sovereigns.

As the natives witnessed these ceremonies from their hiding-places on the edge of the woods, they gradually regained confidence, and drew a little nearer the strange white men. When they saw that the new-comers seemed to have no intention of injuring them, they approached and made signs of friendship. These were responded to, and the natives came still nearer, and stroked the beards of the Spaniards and examined their hands and faces,



COLUMBUS APPROACHING SAN SALVADOR.

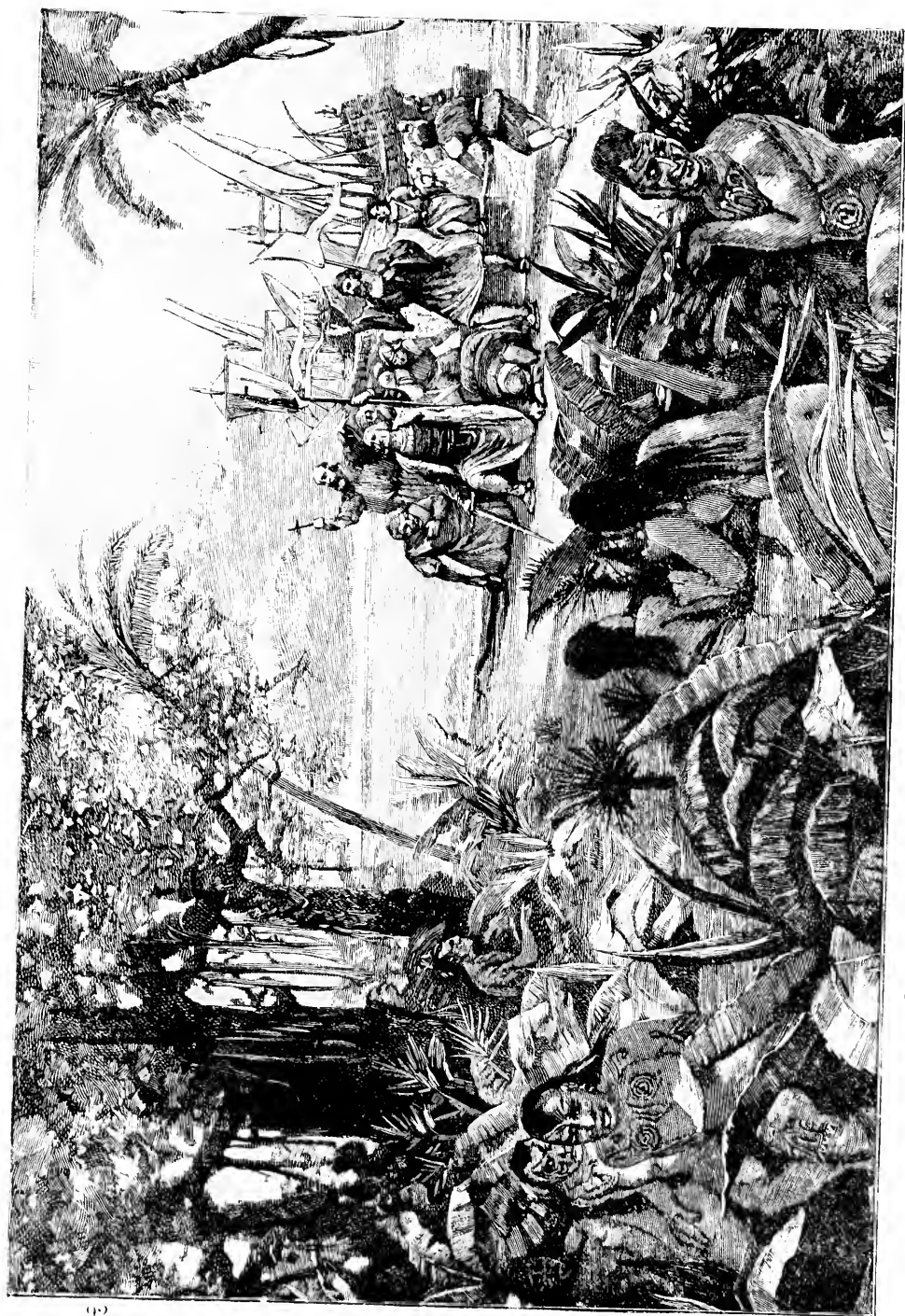
evidently wondering at the whiteness of their skins. All these demonstrations were preceded and accompanied by frequent prostrations and other signs of adoration. To the simple-minded inhabitants of the island, it seemed that these men had come in their great winged vessels straight from the blue heaven which bent over their island, and touched the ocean all around them.

As Columbus supposed that he had reached India, it was natural that he and his followers should speak of the natives of the newly discovered country as Indians; a name which was so much used before it was fully ascertained that he had reached another continent, that reason has never been able to displace it.

The Indians wore no clothing, but had their bodies painted with various colors. Their only arms were lances with heads of sharp flints or fish-bones, or hardened at the end by fire. They evidently had no knowledge of sharpened iron or steel, for one of them took hold of a sword by the edge and cut his hand. They received with eager gratitude the trifles which Columbus and his followers presented to them, offering in return balls of cotton yarn, tame parrots, and cassava bread. These, however, were not the articles of traffic which the Spaniards had come so far to procure; the small golden ornaments which some of the natives wore in their noses were of much greater interest than their twenty-pound balls of cotton, and Columbus at once made inquiry regarding the source from which they were derived.

He learned that these precious ornaments came from the southwest, where there dwelt a king who was always served in vessels of fine gold. Much more has the great discoverer set down of the same kind, but it is probable that he deceived himself in much of what he understood them to tell him by signs. He felt assured that he had now reached the outlying islands of Asia, and was near the countries of fabulous riches of which Marco Polo had written; and he readily believed that the gestures of these naked Indians indicated much more than the savages tried to express.

The island, which Columbus thoroughly explored, was named San Salvador. Around it lay beautiful and fertile islands, so that he was at a loss which to choose as the next to be explored. He set sail two days after landing, taking with him seven of the natives, to whom he proposed to teach the Spanish language, that they might serve as interpreters. As these became better able to communicate with him by signs, and understood more clearly what information he wished to obtain, he learned that he was in the midst of an archipelago, numbering more islands than the limited arithmetical skill of the savages could reckon. They enumerated more than a hundred, and gave him to understand that they were all well peopled, and that the inhabitants were frequently at war with each other. All this was in full accordance with what Columbus had heard of the islands about the eastern coast of Asia.



LANDING OF COLUMBUS ON THE ISLAND OF SAN SALVADOR.

Several islands were visited in succession, but without finding the vast stores of gold which they had understood from the natives were in the possession of their neighbors. They learned, however, that their coming was regarded as a wonderful event by the natives, as a single Indian in a canoe was taken into one of the ships, and found to be a messenger dispatched to carry the news among the different islands. How many similar messengers were dispatched, the Spaniards did not know; but they were less proud of their own courage in venturing across the ocean when they reflected that this naked savage had entered upon a voyage of such length and danger in his frail canoe without a single companion to assist him in storms or tell of his fate if he should perish.

Wherever he went, Columbus heard of an island of much greater extent than any that he had seen, called Cuba: and he determined that this must be the long-sought Cipango. He determined to set sail to this favored country; but his departure from the smaller islands was delayed for some days by calms and contrary winds. It was the 28th of October before he finally reached the coast of the Queen of the Antilles. In his journal, Columbus seems never tired of expatiating upon the beauty of the islands which were now seen by Europeans for the first time: their mild climate, the smoothness of the waters in which these jewels of ocean were set, the majesty of the forests, the beauty of the birds, the magnificence of the flowers, even the glittering sparkle of the insects, are constantly the subjects of his praise.

While coasting along Cuba, Martin Alonzo Pinzon learned from some natives that there was a country in the interior called Cubanacan. Later researches have developed the fact that *nacan* is simply the native word meaning the interior, so that Cubanacan means only the interior part of Cuba; but the heated imagination of Pinzon connected this name with the word Khan, and the amazing discovery was communicated to Columbus. The discoverer at once concluded that he was mistaken in supposing Cuba to be Cipango, or Japan; it was a part of the mainland, and he was now in the territories of the Great Khan.

The Admiral settled it in his own mind that he was about a hundred leagues from the capital of this mighty potentate, and resolved to send ambassadors to him at once. Two envoys were selected; one of them a converted Jew, who was acquainted with Hebrew and Chaldaic, and had some knowledge of Arabic, in which language, it was supposed, he would be able to communicate with some one in the court of the Khan. These ambassadors were instructed to inform the Khan that Columbus had been sent by the King and Queen of Spain, for the purpose of establishing friendly relations between the powers; they were also to ascertain exactly the situation of certain ports, provinces, and rivers; and they were to find out if certain drugs and spices, of which they were provided with samples, were produced in that country.

While awaiting the return of these ambassadors, Columbus occupied himself in attending to the necessary repairs of his vessels. Having arranged for this work, he spent some time in the exploration of the interior; and again received much remarkable information from the natives. We cannot help suspecting that the natives found Columbus such a willing listener that they indulged their imaginations considerably; for they gravely assured him that there were tribes at a distance, of men who had but one eye; that there were others who had the heads of dogs, and that there were still others who were cannibals, killing their victims by cutting their throats and drinking their blood. Mingled with these stories, were accounts of a place which they called Bohio, where they declared that the people wore anklets and bracelets and necklaces of gold and pearls.

While Columbus was being thus ably entertained by the Indians of the coast of Cuba, his ambassadors had penetrated to the interior in search of the capital of Kublai Khan. They returned Nov. 6, having reached a point twelve leagues from the coast, and learned there that there was nothing of interest beyond it. The village which was the capital of Cubanacan contained about fifty huts, and at least a thousand inhabitants. The envoys had been treated with courtesy and hospitality, though, to their surprise, they found that Hebrew and Arabic were but gibberish to the natives, and were obliged to rely upon the services of an Indian who had accompanied them, and who had picked up a little smattering of Spanish. They saw no gold or precious stones; and when the white men displayed their samples of cinnamon, pepper, and similar commodities, they were informed that such things grew far off to the southwest.

During their absence, Columbus had become acquainted with the properties of a plant, which, one of his biographers justly observes, was destined to be of more real value to the people of the eastern continent than all the precious metals that have been mined in the New World. This was the potato. The ambassadors sent into the interior saw in use a plant which has not, indeed, the wide usefulness of the potato, but which has become necessary to the comfort of many of the white race. This was tobacco, the name of which is derived from the Indian word designating a sort of rude cigar; the term being applied by the Spaniards to the plant and its dried leaves. The strangers at first regarded this practice of smoking as singular and nauseous; but as it is said of vice that—

“We first endure, then pity, then embrace.”

so the white men were taught by curiosity to learn what the Indian found in tobacco that was pleasant, and speedily acquired the habit.

Columbus was now convinced, by the report of his envoys, that he was not within such a short distance of the capital of the Khan. He still listened

eagerly, however, to the tales which the Indians had to tell of Babeque and Bohio, although he was not quite certain whether these terms applied to the same place or not. He decided to go in search of Babeque, which he hoped to find the name of some rich and populous island off the coast of Asia. Later researches into the language of the natives of these islands have not made it wholly clear what they intended to convey by these two words; according to some authorities, they are names applied to the coast of the mainland; others that *bohio* means house, or populousness.

November 12, the little fleet weighed anchor, and sailed eastward along the coast of Cuba. A storm obliged them to take refuge in a harbor to which Columbus gave the name of Puerto del Principe, and several days were spent in exploring that cluster of small and beautiful islands which have since been called El Jardin del Rey, "The Garden of the King." On the 19th, he again put to sea, and for two days made ineffectual efforts to reach an island which lay about twenty leagues to the eastward, supposing it to be Babeque. Finding this impossible, on the evening of the second day he put his ship about, and made signals for the others to do the same. The *Pinta* was considerably to the eastward of the *Santa Maria* and the *Nina*, and, to the surprise of the Admiral, failed to answer the signals or comply with the commands which they indicated. He repeated the signals; but still the *Pinta* paid no attention. Night came on; and hoisting signal lights at the masthead of the *Santa Maria*, so that the *Pinta* could easily follow through the darkness, he sailed onward. Morning came, but nothing was to be seen of the *Pinta*.

Columbus was not a little disquieted by this action of Pinzon. The rich navigator of Palos, who had furnished a large part of the money required for the expedition, and without whose aid Columbus would probably have been obliged to seek assistance at some other court than that of Spain, was fully aware of the importance of the services which he had rendered to the Genoese adventurer. Thoroughly familiar with the theories of Columbus, he had adopted them as his own, and probably came gradually to consider them as much his property as they were the foreigner's. Several times, during the voyage, there had been serious differences of opinion between Columbus and his chief subordinate; and when the Admiral saw that the *Pinta* had thus deserted the flag-ship, he suspected that Pinzon intended to return to Spain at once and claim all the honors due to the successful prosecutor of this great enterprise.

But Columbus was not to be deterred from his purpose of discovering the rich and populous parts of the far east; he continued coasting along the northern line of Cuba until, Dec. 5, he reached the eastern extremity, to which he gave the name of Alpha and Omega, supposing it to be the eastern point of Asia. He was now undetermined what course to pursue. Return to Spain would be unadvisable at this season of the year; and so far as the

Pinta was concerned, she was so much swifter sailer than the other vessels, and had the start of them by many hours, that it was useless to think of chasing her across the Atlantic. If he kept along the coast, following its trend to the southwest, he might find the country of the Khan; but then he could not hope to reach Babeque, which his Indian guides now assured him lay to the northeast.

Thus undecided, he continued cruising aimlessly for some days in the waters around the eastern end of Cuba; and at last descried land to the southeast, which he decided to make. The natives protested against his seeking to do so, assuring him that the people were fierce and cruel cannibals. But these remonstrances were unheeded, and Columbus steered toward Hayti.

He anchored in a harbor at the western end of the island, to which he gave the name which it still retains—St. Nicholas. As they explored the northern coast of the island, they caught many fish, several species of which were similar to those which the sailors had taken in Spanish waters; they heard from the wooded shore the notes of song-birds which reminded them of the nightingale and other birds of Andalusia; and they fancied they saw, in the beautifully diversified country, some resemblance to the more beautiful parts of Spain. Accordingly, Columbus named the island Hispaniola, or little Spain.

While exploring the island, Columbus found plants and birds of much different species and more abundant than those he had seen in Europe. Animals were also less rare, more various, and of greater size; amongst others the iguana, a sort of gigantic lizard, whose likeness to the crocodile, or at least to the representations of it then extant, made some of the crew mistake it for one of those dreadful monsters. Glad to make use of his courage in reassuring his men, who were frightened at everything that was new, Columbus did not hesitate to attack this beast; he rushed at him with uplifted sword, and pursuing him into the waters of the lake, did not come out until, to the universal satisfaction, he had made an end of him. The skin which he carried back with him to Europe, measured seven feet in length, much more than the average length.

Columbus must have smiled at the recollection of this exploit, when he found out that this terrible-looking beast, with its enormous crop, its long and powerful tail, its spine notched like a saw, its sharp claws, is as harmless as our common lizard, and is even esteemed a great delicacy by the Indians.

The natives had abandoned their villages and fled into the interior at the approach of the vessels, leaving their cultivated fields and large villages. Columbus sent well-armed parties in search of them, and one such party succeeded in capturing a young woman, who was induced by presents of clothes, trifling ornaments, and trinkets, and by the kind treatment which she experienced, to act as ambassador to her people. It was no difficult matter after

this to secure the presence of large numbers of the natives, who were well disposed toward the strangers when they found that there need be no fear of them.



THE FIGHT WITH THE IGUANA.

They were frequently visited by chiefs of various degrees of importance; and, Dec. 22, received a message from a chief named Guacanagari, borne by a number of natives, who filled one of the largest canoes that the Spaniards had as yet seen. This cacique, as the chiefs of these islands are called by Columbus, asked that the ships might be brought to a point opposite his village, which was a little farther east than the point where they then were. But the wind was not favorable, and Columbus had to content himself with sending a deputation to visit Guacanagari, by whom they were received with great state and honor. But, as before, the Spaniards learned from this chief

nothing of the vast stores of treasure for which they were seeking; and although the cacique and his followers freely gave them any of their few golden ornaments, it was evident that these were not drawn from any mine worked by Guacanagari and his tribe.

The envoys returned, bearing the most friendly messages with them; and as soon as the wind proved favorable, Columbus gave orders that the two vessels should sail toward the village of Guacanagari. His hopes had again been raised by the statements of various minor caciques who had visited him during the absence of his messengers, and who talked much of a place which they called Cibao, the cacique of which had banners of wrought gold. To the ears of the great discoverer this name was nearly enough like Cipango to mislead him completely; and he believed that at last he had come upon the traces of that magnificent prince mentioned by Marco Polo, whose wealth exceeded even that of the ruler of Cathay.

It was the morning of December 24 that the two vessels departed from their resting-place to proceed toward the residence of the cacique. The wind was so light as hardly to fill the sails, and they made but little progress. At eleven o'clock that Christmas eve, they were about four or five miles from the harbor where the cacique's village was situated; the sea was calm and smooth, and the coast had been so explored by the party of messengers that Columbus felt no fears regarding rocks or other sources of danger. He accordingly retired to the rest which he had earned by sleepless nights spent in watching the course of the vessels along an unknown coast.

Scarcely had he fallen asleep, before the helmsman, in defiance of the commander's plain orders, gave the helm over to a boy, and himself went to sleep. It was not long before the whole crew of the *Santa Maria* was locked in slumber; the only wakeful one being the boy at the helm.

The currents along this coast are swift and strong; and when the ship was once in the power of one of them, she was swept rapidly along. To older or more heedful ears the sound of the breakers would have given warning of the danger; but the boy thought nothing of what he was doing. Silently and swiftly the current bore the ship upon a sand-bank; suddenly the boy-helmsman felt the rudder strike, and heard the tumult of the rushing sea. Frightened, he called loudly for help; the Admiral, a light sleeper, and always feeling the responsibility which rested upon him, was the first upon deck, followed hastily by the sailors who had been sleeping when they should have watched, and by those others who were not on duty. He quickly gave orders to carry an anchor astern, that by this means the vessel might be warped off. The boat was launched, and the men detailed for the purpose entered it; but either, insane from fright, they misunderstood the order, or purposely disobeyed it, by seeking their own safety first, and at once rowed off toward the other vessel, which lay half a league to windward.

The *Santa Maria* had swung across the stream, and lay helpless, the water continually gaining upon her. The Admiral gave orders that the mast should be cut away; hoping to lighten her so that she would be carried off the bar before any more serious damage was done. The order was obeyed; but the keel was too firmly bedded in the sand for this measure to prove effective. The shock had opened several seams, through which the water entered in large quantities. The breakers struck her with force again and again, until she lay over on her side. Had the weather been less calm, this vessel, the largest of the armament which a queen had fitted out for the discovery of a New World, would have gone to pieces on the shore of that far-away island.

In the meantime, the boat had reached the caravel *Nina* and given information of the condition of the larger vessel. The commander of the caravel reproached the sailors for their desertion of the leader in such misfortunes, and immediately dispatched a boat to his relief. Columbus and his crew took refuge on board the *Nina* until morning, and envoys were at once sent off to inform the cacique of what had happened.

Guacanagari showed great distress at the misfortunes of his expected visitors; nor did he confine himself to mere words of sympathy and condolence, but showed himself active in measures for their relief. All the canoes that could be mustered were pressed into service, and all his people assisted in unloading the vessel. The lading was stored near the palace of the cacique, and an armed guard placed around it to prevent depredations; the cacique and his brothers having kept close watch while the work of unloading was going on, to prevent the helpers from being overcome by temptation to help themselves to these wonderful things.

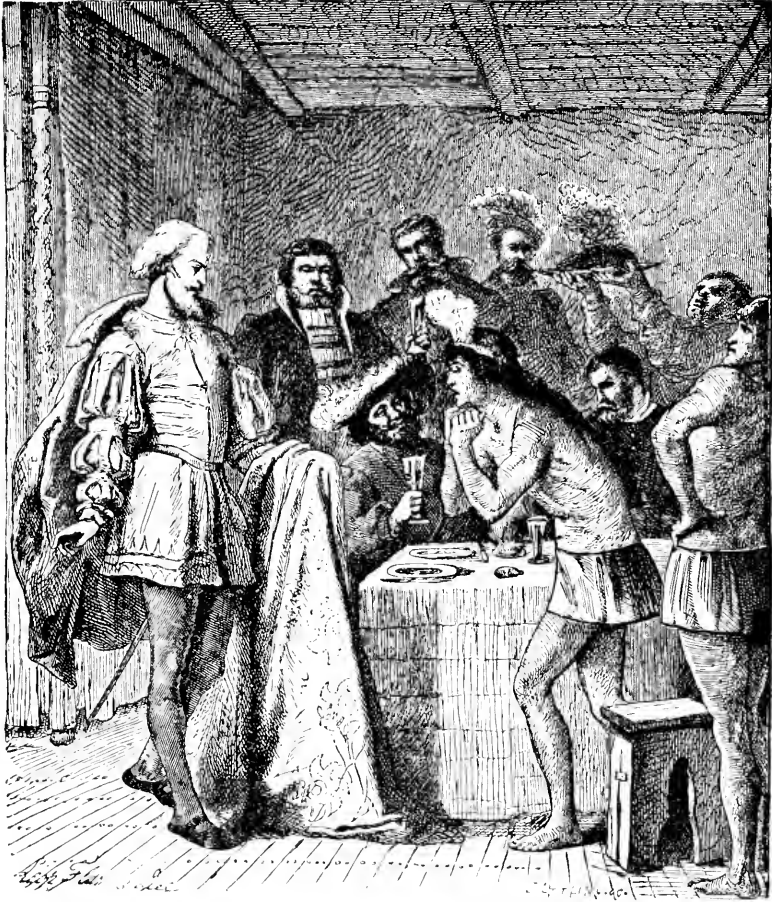
To Columbus and his companions, this course appeared unnecessary; so much sympathy with the shipwrecked sailors was shown by all who, at the command of the chief, were engaged in assisting them; and Columbus afterward bore this testimony to their character, in his Journal:—

“So loving, so tractable, so peaceable are these people that I swear to your majesties there is not in the world a better nation, nor a better land. They love their neighbors as themselves; and their discourse is ever sweet and gentle, and accompanied with a smile; and though it is true that they are naked, yet their manners are decorous and praiseworthy.”

The day after Christmas, Columbus was visited on board the *Nina* by Guacanagari, who assured him again of his eagerness to render the Spaniards any assistance which lay in his power.

The Admiral, who was at dinner when he came on board, observes in his journal with regard to this visit, that the cacique would not allow him when he entered the cabin to rise or use any ceremony, and that, when invited to partake of any dish, he took just as much as was necessary for him not to

appear impolite. He did the same if anything was given him to drink; he put it to his lips, merely tasted it, and sent it to his followers. His air and his movements were remarkably grave and dignified.



THE GRATEFUL CACIQUE.

His dignity and discretion, however, were not proof against all the attractions that surrounded him. While, with the help of the Indians he had brought with him as interpreters from San Salvador, Columbus was entertaining his royal guest, he noticed that the cacique turned his eyes again and again, as if in spite of himself, on the quilt that covered his bed. Columbus, seeing this, hastened to present him with the coveted object, together with a pair of red shoes and a necklace of amber beads. The gratitude of the cacique and his officers knew no bounds, and there is no doubt that these

gifts did more to exalt the power and grandeur of Spain and her sovereigns in their eyes than all the words of Columbus and his interpreters on that subject. While they were conversing, a canoe arrived from another part of the island, bringing bits of gold to be exchanged for small bells, such as were worn by the hawk used at that time in hunting. To the Indians, these appeared the most desirable articles which the Spaniards had to distribute among them; they hung the bells on their arms and legs when preparing for the dances of which they were so fond, and which were performed to the cadence of certain songs. They had found that the Spaniards valued gold more than anything which their savage treasuries contained, and readily brought all that they had to exchange for the wonderful musical bells.

Sailors who had been on shore, trading, informed Columbus that gold was easily obtained in trade with the natives; and this restored the drooping spirits of the Admiral to something of their normal state. The cacique saw the change in his countenance, and inquired what good news the sailors had brought. He was told how desirous the Admiral was of obtaining the yellow metal; and replied that there was a place not far off, among the mountains, where it could be obtained in large quantities. He promised to get as much as Columbus might desire, the metal being there in such abundance, he said, that it was not held as very valuable. This place he called Cibao; and Columbus at once recognized this name, and again confounded it with Cipango.

When Guacanagari had been entertained by Columbus, he insisted that the Admiral should be his guest on shore. The request was granted; and the guest received such honor and sympathy as to make him admire the kindly yet dignified savage chieftain more than ever. In return for the cacique's efforts at entertaining him, he sent on board the ship for a skilled archer and his arms, and showed the assembled Indians the accuracy of such weapons. The people of Guacanagari were of so unwarlike a nature that they had no similar skill to display; but the cacique informed Columbus that the Caribs, who sometimes made forays upon them, had bows and arrows which they used with deadly precision. Columbus assured the chief that he had nothing more to fear from the Caribs, for the great monarchs of Spain had weapons far more terrible than these, which they would not hesitate to use in the defense of a people who had assisted their Admiral. To illustrate his words, he ordered an arquebus and a heavy cannon to be discharged.

To the Indians, it seemed that a thunderbolt had fallen from a clear sky; and they fell prostrate on their faces in terror. When they had recovered a little, Columbus called their attention to the place where the cannon-ball had crashed through the trees, carrying away great branches; and they were filled with renewed dismay. But he assured them that these arms would not be used against them, but for their protection against the cruel and dreaded

Caribs; and secure in the friendship of these children of light who were armed with thunder from their native skies, the simple savages were more than content.

The fame of the hawks—~~—~~ns had gone abroad, and there was not an Indian who had a golden ornament who was not more than willing to trade it for one of these precious articles. Las Casas, whose work is one of the chief authorities regarding this part of the life of Columbus, tells us that one Indian offered a handful of gold-dust in exchange for one; and when the trade had been made, hurried off as fast as his feet would carry him, lest the Spaniards should regret that they had sold it so cheap.

The Spaniards who had endured so many hardships and dangers became enamored of the easy, luxurious life which the Indians led; in a land where the earth produced, almost spontaneously, roots and fruits enough to feed more than the inhabitants, where there was evidently no winter to be feared, where shelter and clothing were looked upon as unnecessary, where the main part of the day was passed in indolent repose, and the main part of the night in dancing to the music of their songs or the beating of their rude drums, the Indians were indeed creatures to be envied. Gradually the sailors came to long to share this life, so full of ease and enjoyment, and Columbus formed the idea of establishing a colony of those who wished to remain; while he, with his one vessel and a small crew, would return to Spain to carry the news of his discovery—unless he had been anticipated by the captain of the *Pinta*—and to procure the needed supplies and reinforcements. Had the natives been less peaceable and friendly, such a course would have been the height of madness; but armed as the Spaniards were with cannon and smaller fire-arms, and surrounded by those whose chief wish seemed to be to minister to the white strangers, there appeared to be no difficulty in the way.

But he did not propose to take any unnecessary risks; the stranded vessel was to be broken up to afford materials for a fortress; and it was to be armed with her guns. Provisions enough could be spared from the general stock to maintain a small garrison for a year; so that whatever change there might be in the feelings of the natives, the white men who were left behind would be entirely safe. He intended that they should occupy themselves with exploring the island and becoming acquainted with the location and extent of the gold mines on which they all laid such stress, and in trading with the natives for whatever of the precious metal they might possess. At the same time, they could learn the language of the country more perfectly, so that communication would be easier and surer; and acquaint themselves with the habits and customs of the people, so as to make future intercourse all the smoother.

Columbus did not suppose that the fortress, except under very improbable circumstances, would be necessary for the defense of his followers from the natives; for the latter had too clearly proven their unwarlike nature and their

friendly disposition; but he considered that some sort of military organization and round of required duties was necessary to keep the Spaniards in good order during the absence of a ruler specially appointed by the Crown, and to enable those who were disposed to do what was right by the natives to hold in check those who might otherwise have proved tyrannical, unprincipled, and cruel.

For the discoverer, who was so enchanted with the beauty of nature and the character of the inhabitants in this New World, entertained fond hopes that all these people would speedily be converted to the Christian faith. Wherever he had gone, he had found them of the same gentle, loving disposition, ready to listen eagerly to whatever the strangers could make them understand, and readily learning by rote such prayers as the sailors taught them, and making the sign of the cross with becoming devoutness of aspect. This is not the place to discuss the good done by prayers which are not understood by those who utter them; but it is a fact that these Spaniards of the fifteenth century thought they had done good when they taught an Indian the Latin words of a prayer, of the meaning of which the savage had not the slightest conception; and which may have been rather hazy to the Spaniard. Columbus looked eagerly forward to the time when all these untaught savages should receive the rite of baptism, believing that that was all that was necessary to make them good Christians. Throughout the time that he had sought assistance in working out his theory, he had held fast to the idea of advancing the dominion of the Church; and this feeling was probably at the bottom of his reasons for seeking assistance from Spain. Isabella was known for a devout Catholic, and ardent in the cause of religion; hence, although the country was convulsed with civil war, he sought assistance from her, rather than from the cold and crafty men who sat on the thrones of France and England.

The project of building a fortress and leaving a colony was broached to the natives, who were enraptured with the plan. That the wonderful white men who had come from heaven with their thunderous weapons should remain to protect them from their dreaded enemies the Caribs, while the Admiral returned to the skies for more white men and hawks' bells, was almost too good to be true; and they eagerly assisted in building the fortress.

A site was chosen, the wreck was broken up and brought to shore. A large vault was to be dug, and over this a strong wooden tower was to be erected; finally, the whole was to be surrounded by a wide and deep ditch, with the usual draw-bridge. In the vault were to be stored such supplies of arms, ammunition, and food as should be brought from the wreck, and could be spared by those who were about to undertake the homeward voyage.

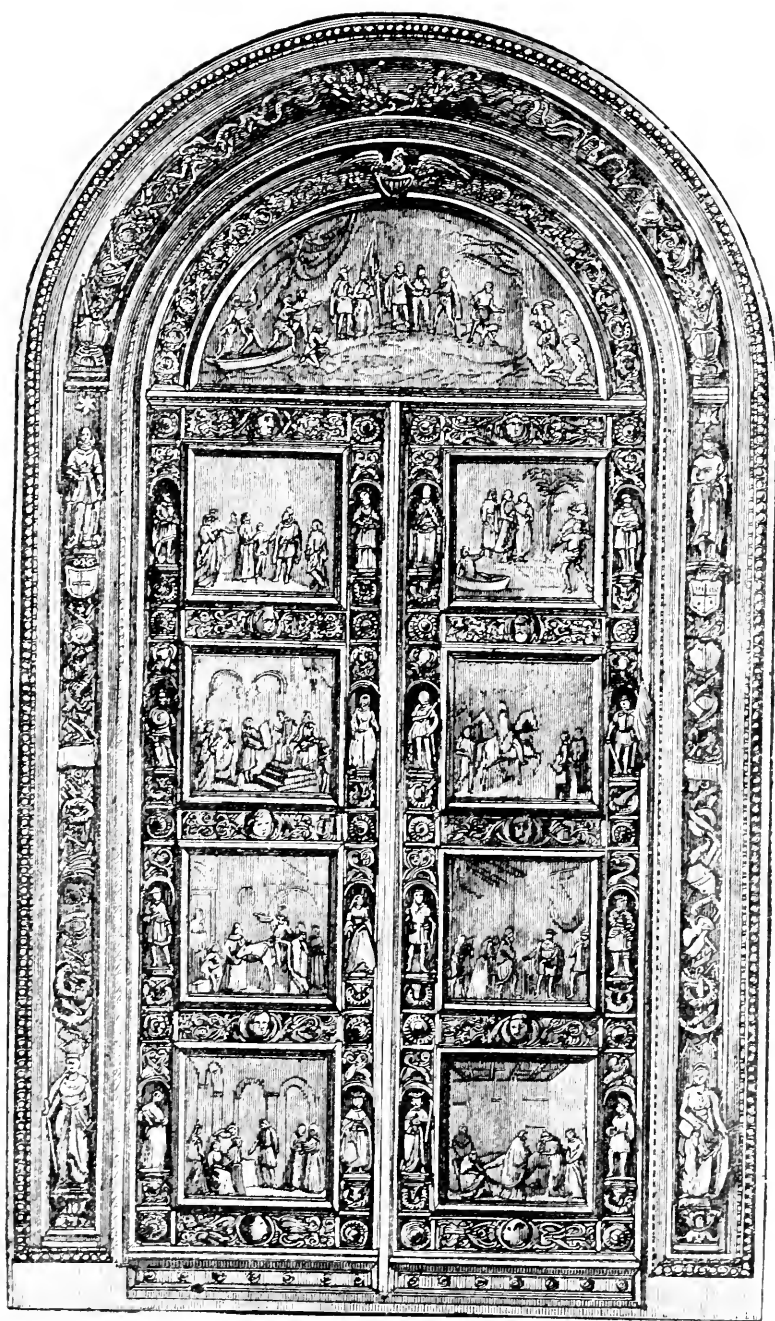
So industriously did the Spaniards push the work, and so eagerly did the many natives assist them, that the whole fortress was completed in ten days

from the time that Columbus had given orders to begin it. He gave it the name of *La Navidad*, or the Nativity, because they had been rescued from the wreck of the vessel on Christmas Day. Having concluded the account of the building of this tower, the devout Admiral points out the care which Providence had exercised over his voyage; so that even the shipwreck, which appeared at the time to be such a great misfortune, was the cause of his finding what riches lay hid in the island, where otherwise he would only have touched at the coast and gone farther on. As seen more clearly by those who have a knowledge of later events, the wreck of the *Santa Maria* appears the misfortune which it seemed at first; since because of it Columbus devoted so much of his time and attention, in later years, to this very island, and suffered much because of his connection with it.

While they were engaged in building the fortress, some Indians brought word that a large vessel, like that of Columbus, had been seen in a harbor at the eastern end of the island. There could be but one explanation of this: it must be the *Pinta*. Columbus at once sent a Spaniard, with a crew of natives in a native canoe, to take a letter to Pinzon, urging him to join company at once, but making no complaint regarding his desertion, or saying a word that was not entirely friendly. A close search, however, by these messengers, failed to disclose the presence of any such vessel; and they returned to the Admiral. Other rumors reached them of a ship like theirs, but Columbus resolved to take no further steps toward searching for the lost vessel until something more definite should be heard.

In the meantime, it was a subject of much anxiety to Columbus, how the voyage back to Spain would be accomplished. The *Pinta*, the swiftest of the ships, had deserted, and they knew nothing of her fate; she might have escaped across the ocean, or she might have been wrecked on the shore of some distant island, or she might have foundered at sea and gone down with all on board. The *Santa Maria*, the largest of his ships, had been wrecked and destroyed. There remained only the *Nina*, which really was fit only for coasting. Indeed, it was not wholly because Columbus had feared to demand large ships that he had accepted small ones; he had selected those which seemed to him best fitted for coasting and for tracing an intricate course in channels between islands.

But the *Nina* was not the vessel in which any sane sailor would have wished to cross the Atlantic without a consort; much less was it one to which a man who had labored and waited for a score of years to secure the realization of his dreams would wish to entrust the fulfillment of those dreams. For, should the *Nina* be lost on the homeward voyage, what record would remain of Columbus? It would only be known that he maintained a theory which the most learned men of Spain condemned as impracticable; that he had sailed into the western ocean, and had been lost there, as they had predicted.



THE COLUMBUS BRONZE DOORS IN THE CAPITOL AT WASHINGTON.

Return he must, however; and preparations for the homeward voyage were begun about the same time as the fortress. Thirty-nine persons were selected to remain behind at La Navidad, while the others, numbering a few more, sailed eastward again. Minute instructions were given the colonists, to treat the natives always with gentleness and justice, remembering how much they were indebted to Guacanagari; to keep together, for mutual safety, and not stray beyond the territories of the cacique who had so befriended them; and to acquire a knowledge of the productions and mines of the island, to procure as much gold and spice as possible by trading, and to seek a better situation for a settlement, as this harbor was far from being a safe one. The boat of the *Santa Maria* was left with them, as well as a variety of seeds to sow, and a quantity of articles to be used in traffic. A commandant of the post was appointed in the name of the sovereigns, and two lieutenants, upon whom, successively, the command was to devolve in case of his death. Having made all arrangements for the safety and well-being of the colony, as far as such arrangements could be made by any man, Columbus, on the 4th of January, 1493, sailed from Hispaniola eastward across the broad ocean: five months and one day after he left Palos.

The student of idle superstitions may well remark the recurrence of a certain day of the week in the history of this first voyage of Columbus; it was on Friday that he set sail from Palos; it was on Friday that he first saw the shores of Guanahani, the first land of the New World on which his eyes rested; and it was on Friday that he left Hispaniola on his return. The sixth day of the week is far from being considered a day on which to begin great undertakings; but the greatest event of modern times is thus associated with it.

The first two days of the return voyage were without event; on the third, the lookout gave the cry that he saw the *Pinta* at a distance. The report was an animating one; for there was not a man on board but fully realized the dangers of their long and lonely voyage.

The *Pinta* hastened toward them as soon as the *Nina* was descried by her lookout; and conversation proving impracticable by reason of the state of the weather, the two vessels, at the command of the leader of the expedition, put back to the bay a little west of what is now called Monte Christi. Here the Admiral and his chief subordinate landed, and here was told the story of the *Pinta's* adventures. According to Martin Alonzo Pinzon's account, he had been compelled to part company by stress of weather, and had ever since been seeking to rejoin his companions. Columbus received this statement without contradiction, although he did not believe it from the first; and made investigations afterward which brought the truth to his ears. One of the Indians on board the *Pinta* had given information of a gold-bearing country to the eastward which had excited the imagination of the master; he had taken

advantage of circumstances to separate from the others, and had sought to be the first to discover this rich country. For some days he sailed about among a group of small islands, unable to shape his course so as to avoid them; but the Indians had finally conducted him to Hispaniola; the rumors that Columbus had heard were not wholly false, although unreliable, or perhaps misunderstood, in their statements of localities. Pinzon had remained three weeks near the shore of this island, and had collected by trading no small amount of gold; half of this he had retained for himself, half had been divided among his crew, to insure their silence regarding the transaction. But Columbus, even though the treachery of Pinzon could be clearly proved, could as yet take no steps to punish him in any way, or even appear to disbelieve his assertions. Many of the sailors were relatives or townsmen of Pinzon, and a break with him, at this juncture, might have been fatal to Columbus.

A supply of wood and water was procured for the voyage, and the two vessels coasted a short distance along the shore which had been explored by Pinzon. Arrived at the mouth of a river which Columbus named Rio de Gracia, but which is now Porto Caballo, the Admiral received news that his lieutenant had, during the period of his desertion, carried off four men and two girls from among the Indians of that section. The complaint was investigated, and it was found that the captives were on board the *Pinta*, and that it was the intention of that vessel's commander to take them to Spain and sell them as slaves. The Admiral at once gave orders that they should be released and returned to their own people; being clothed and given many presents as a kind of restitution for the temporary loss of their liberty. This proceeding was not conducted without protest from Pinzon, and we shall find, as we proceed, that Columbus learned to look with less horror upon the project of selling Indians as slaves; but at this time he was careful to take none with him but those who voluntarily accompanied him.

As they continued their course along the coast, they came to an arm of the sea extending so far into the land that at first they supposed it to be a channel separating the island of Hispaniola from some other near neighbor; but it proved to be only a gulf. On the farther side of this inlet, they found a people differing very much from those others with whom the discoverer was so much pleased. These were of a ferocious aspect, and hideously painted; they were armed with war-clubs, or with bows as large as those used by English archers, the arrows being made of slender reeds and tipped with bone or with the tooth of a fish. They also had swords of palm-wood, the weight and hardness of which excited the wonder of the Spaniards. Though ferocious in appearance, and thus armed, they did not seem hostile, but sold two of their bows to the Spaniards, and one of them was induced to go upon the Admiral's vessel.

He was sent back with many presents, to induce his comrades to trade with

the Spaniards. The men in the boat which conveyed him back to land were alarmed at the sight of about fifty fully armed warriors, who gathered on the shore; but at a word from the savage in the boat, they laid down their arms and came to meet the white men. Suddenly, in the midst of a peaceful conference, they rushed toward the spot where they had left their arms, and returned with a quantity of strong cord, as if to bind the strangers. The latter at once attacked them, wounding two. The others took to flight. The Spaniards would have pursued them, but the pilot who commanded the boat forbade it. Such was the first conflict between the natives and the people of southern Europe; if we regard the fight of which the old saga tells as unworthy of credit, the first on the soil of America between Indians and white men.

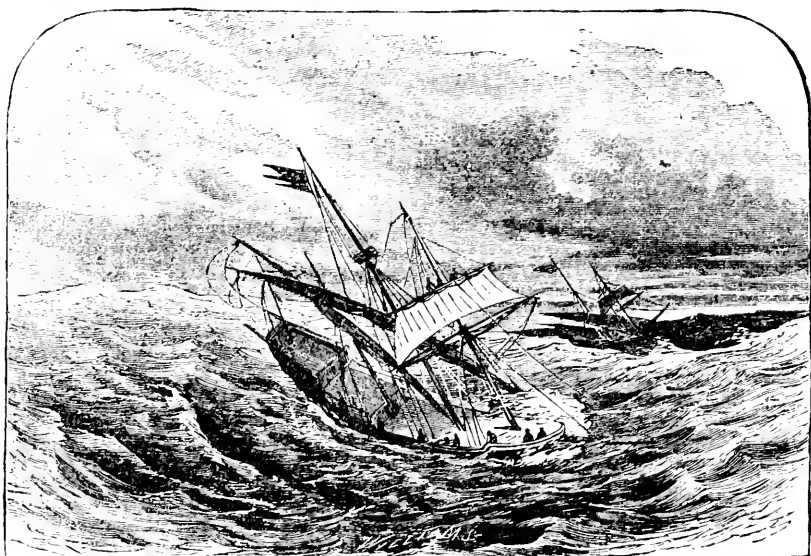
Columbus had been so anxious to keep the peace with all the natives, that he was much troubled at the occurrence of this fight; but he consoled himself by thinking that the Indians had now had a taste of the superiority of the white men's weapons, and would be careful how they attacked them in the future. He was pleased to find that the enmity of the Indians had not been excited by this occurrence, as they returned the next day and appeared more desirous than ever of being friends. They told him of the islands to the east in such terms that Columbus decided to stop there, and prevailed upon four of their young men to accompany him as guides.

Following their guidance, Columbus at first steered to the northeast, then to the southeast; but he had gone but about fifty miles in all when there sprang up a breeze which, it seemed to him and his sailors, would waft them straight to Spain. He saw the discontent on their faces as they thought how far from the direct line of the homeward path they were diverging; he considered how shaky was the allegiance of Pinzon; and how uncertain was the fate of either vessel, should it be exposed to even an ordinary storm among these many islands. He considered that the whole fate of the path which he had marked out to India depended upon his safe arrival on the eastern shore of the Atlantic; and repressing all desire for further exploration of the islands which he had discovered, he gave orders to shift sail and make direct for Spain.

The outward voyage had been full of doubts and anxieties; had it been through one-tenth of the difficulties and dangers which beset the homeward voyage, the New World would have remained undiscovered; for the rebellion of the crew would have been determined enough to have broken even the iron resolution of Columbus.

The trade-winds which had so prospered the outward voyage were of course unfavorable to their return; and it was not until they had run far to the north, and got completely out of the track of these winds, that they were enabled to make any headway. So often had they changed their course to

take advantage of the least wind that promised to bear them homeward, that the pilots had lost their reckoning completely; and could no more agree with each other than they could guess at the true situation. Columbus alone retained a clear idea of where they were, having powers of minute observation which often caused his conclusions to seem little short of inspirations; but he did not enlighten the pilots; since he wished to be the only man who had a clear idea of the route followed in crossing the Atlantic.



THE RETURN OF COLUMBUS.

While they were yet in the midst of the Atlantic, barely two-thirds of their voyage done, they were looking for land, supposing themselves to be in about the latitude of the Madeira Islands. Columbus knew that they were more nearly in a line with the Azores, but that they were not likely to reach even these outposts of the known world for a few days.

February 12, a storm began to come on; and it was only with great labor and danger that the ships could keep on their eastward course. The wind and heavy sea lasted all that day and the next; increasing greatly after sunset on the 13th. Flashes of lightning gave promise of a still greater tempest, which soon burst in such fury that they were obliged to take in all sail, and scud all night under bare poles.

The next morning there was promise of a break in the storm; but it was not fulfilled. The wind rose again, and lasted all through the night. The open vessels labored hard, every moment threatening them with engulfment in the angry waves. As night came on, the two ships were separated; Columbus kept on a straight course to the northeast, endeavoring to signal

by lights to the *Pinta*; but no answering lights could be seen through the blackness of the stormy night. The weakness of her foremast had prevented her from holding the wind, and she had been obliged to run before it due north.

Day broke over a waste of waters, still angry and threatening. All through the dreary day the helpless little *Nina* was driven along before the wind, not knowing what had become of her companion vessel. The ship was nearly disabled, and all seamanship was in vain; there was but one source of help in such emergencies, and thither Columbus and his crew betook themselves. Thinking to avert the wrath of Heaven as manifested in this terrible tempest, he determined to offer solemn vows and acts of penance. Pilgrimages to peculiarly sacred places were in that day a favorite means of showing devotion, and were esteemed acceptable worship. At the suggestion of Columbus, it was determined to cast lots, to see who should vow to make a pilgrimage, immediately after landing, to the shrine of Santa Maria de Guadaloupe, bearing a wax taper of five pounds' weight. A number of beans, one of which was marked with a cross, were placed in a cap, and the crew assembled to draw from among them. Columbus, of course, was the first to do so; and he drew the marked bean, which indicated that he was to make the pilgrimage. Another lot was cast, to decide who should undertake a pilgrimage to the shrine at Loretto; and Columbus agreed to pay the expenses of the seaman who drew the marked bean. A third time was chance invoked to decide who should become a pilgrim, this time to the shrine of Santa Clara de Moguer, and coupled with an obligation to procure a solemn high mass, and to watch all night in the chapel; and this, like the first, fell upon Columbus.

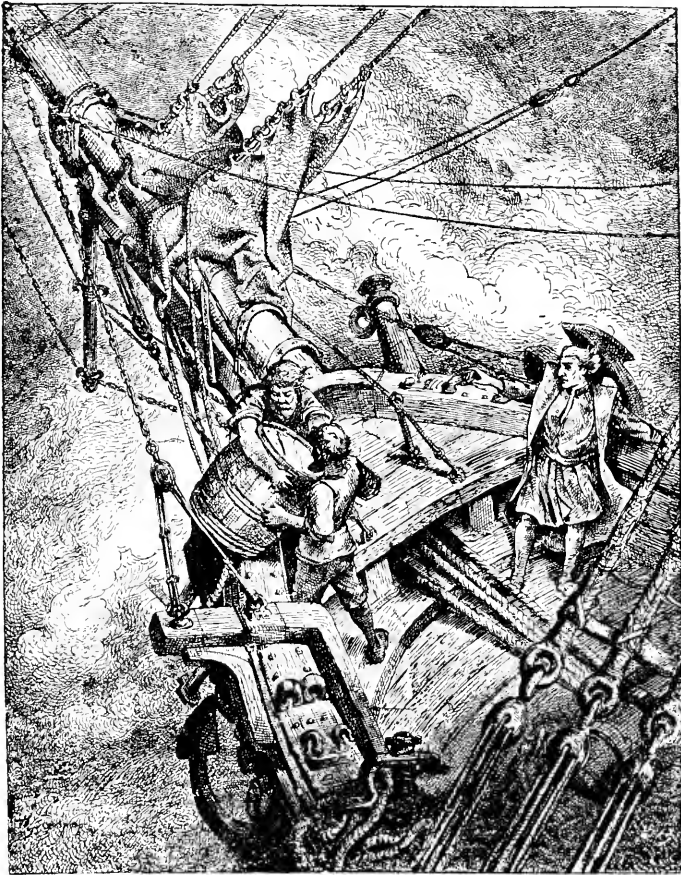
But in spite of these pious vows, the tempest was not abated; and the whole crew agreed that wherever they first landed they would go in procession, barefooted, and clad only in their shirts, or close under-tunics, to some church dedicated to the Virgin, and offer up a solemn thanksgiving for their safety. Each man, besides, made such private vows of penance or reformation of life as seemed good to him; and the whole crew anxiously waited to see the result of their acts of piety.

But even to the eye of faith it was not perceptible, and all gave themselves up for lost. The storm continued unabated. Their danger was increased by the lightness of the vessel; the water casks being nearly emptied, and the provisions having run low. To remedy this evil, Columbus gave orders that the empty casks should be filled with sea-water: and thus ballasted, the caravel rode more steadily.

The condition of the mind of Columbus is better pictured by his own words, as found in a letter to the sovereigns, than in any which could be found to express it. He says:—

“ I could have supported this evil fortune with less grief, had my person

alone been in jeopardy, since I am a debtor for my life to the supreme Creator, and have been at other times within a step of death. But it was a cause of infinite sorrow and trouble to think that, after having been illuminated from on high with faith and certainty to undertake this enterprise, after having victoriously achieved it, and when on the point of convincing my opponents, and securing to your highnesses great glory and vast increase of



COLUMBUS' MEN THROWING OVER THE CASK.

dominions, it should please the Divine Majesty to defeat all by my death. It would have been more supportable, also, had I not been accompanied by others who had been drawn on by my persuasions, and who, in their distress, cursed not only the hour of their coming, but the fear inspired by my words which prevented their turning back, as they had at various times determined. Above all, my grief was doubled when I thought of my two sons, whom I had left at school in Cordova, destitute, in a strange land, without any testimony

of the services rendered by their father, which, if known, might have inclined your highnesses to befriend them. And although, on the one hand, I was comforted by the faith that the Deity would not permit a work of such great exaltation to his Church, wrought through so many troubles and contradictions, to remain imperfect; yet, on the other hand, I reflected on my sins, as a punishment for which he might intend that I should be deprived of the glory which would redound to me in this world."

While in this state of uncertainty as to what had become of the *Pinta*, and what was to become of the *Nina*, the tireless Admiral of the Indian Seas determined to take every means to perpetuate the knowledge of his discovery, even should he be lost. An account of his voyage was carefully written out on parchment and enclosed in a waxed cloth, which was placed in the center of a cake of wax. The whole was then shut up in a large barrel, which was cast into the sea. The account of his voyage was addressed to the King and Queen of Spain, and superscribed with a promise of a thousand ducats—about six thousand dollars according to present values—to whoever should deliver it unopened. He made two copies of the account, and placed one, enclosed in a similar way, on the poop of his vessel; so that, if he should be lost, there would be two copies afloat on the ocean.

About the year 1852 a report was circulated, through the English newspapers, that this cask, committed to the waves so long ago, had been picked up by an American vessel off the African coast. Lamartine, one of the great writers who have devoted their talents to a study of the life of Columbus, has accepted this story as correct. Of the other principal biographers of the great discoverer who have written since the date of its publication, Helps is the only one who mentions it; and he says the story has never been substantiated, but probably originated in the brain of some fertile newspaper writer. It seems incredible that, if such a thing were indeed discovered, the fact should not excite wide-spread comment, and the article itself be deposited in some public place, where it could be examined by historians and antiquarians.

Although taking such precautions to prevent the knowledge of his discovery from being wholly lost, Columbus did not let his men know what he was doing; but gave them to suppose that he was performing some religious vow. So great was the variety of such vows in those times, and so whimsical did they sometimes appear to those who did not know the full meaning which the devotee attached to that particular form of doing things, that this excited no surprise in the minds of his followers. If his vow obliged him to throw a cask overboard, it was his duty to do so, especially in such a storm as this, which might have been sent to remind him of a neglect of duty.

A streak of clear sky appeared in the west about sunset, and the wind changed during the night; but the sea still ran high, and they could carry but little sail during the night.

At daybreak on the morning of the 15th, the lookout gave the welcome cry of "Land!" It was plainly to be seen, about five leagues to the east-north-east, directly over the prow of the caravel. The rejoicing sailors began to discuss the question of what land it was; one thought it one of the Madeira Islands; one said that it was a rock near Lisbon; and many of them strove to recognize some Spanish headland in its outlines. Columbus was assured that it was one of the Azores; and this it proved to be. As they approached the land, the wind veered directly around; and for two days the tempest-tossed mariners were kept by the contrary wind in full sight of the land which they longed to reach, but could not.

They succeeded in coming near enough to cast anchor on the evening of the 17th; but the cable parted, and they were obliged to put to sea once more. Beating about all night, they were more successful the next morning, and anchored in a harbor on the northern side of the island, as they had now found it to be.

A boat was sent to land, and it was found that this island was St. Mary's, one of the Azores, and a dependency of the Crown of Portugal. When the inhabitants saw the caravel, and learned that it had been at sea during the tempest, and yet had lived through it, they were wonder-struck; for the storm had raged for fifteen days with unexampled severity. When they learned, however, from what port it had sailed, and that it had crossed the ocean and found land on the west, from which it was even now returning, their wonder and excitement knew no bounds. In reply to inquiries, they pointed out a harbor where the caravel might ride in safety; but insisted that three of the seamen should remain on shore to give them full particulars of the extraordinary things of which they had told.

Morning came; and Columbus, grateful for the preservation of his vessel from the fury of the storm, reminded his men of the vow which they had made, to be fulfilled as soon as they should reach any land where there was a shrine of the Virgin. The crew could not all go at once; so that it was resolved that half should go first; and when they had performed this pious duty and returned, the others, among whom was the leader himself, should follow their example.

There was a small hermitage, dedicated to the Virgin, at no great distance from the spot where they lay at anchor, although hidden by an intervening point of land. This was the end of their pilgrimage; and messengers were sent to the village to procure the services of a priest in celebrating mass.

The governor of the island, Juan de Castaneda, had, on the previous evening, sent refreshment to the tempest-tossed mariners, and claiming through his messenger an acquaintance with Columbus, had been profuse in his compliments and congratulations. He had apologized for not coming in person, but promised to pay them a visit the next morning, bringing more supplies

and the three seamen whom he now detained on shore. It was then with a feeling of perfect security that the devotees left the vessel and marched barefooted to the little hermitage. What was their surprise when, in the very midst of their prayers and thanksgiving, they found themselves surrounded by a mob, mounted and unmounted, from the village, headed by the governor himself: and were all taken prisoners!



A PILGRIMAGE OF GRACE.

Eleven o'clock arrived, and the Admiral was anxiously awaiting the return of his men; but still they came not. He now began to fear that they had been detained by the Portuguese; for he was by no means certain that any official of that government would be disposed to treat him well. There was another alternative: the boat might have been dashed to pieces upon the rocky and surf-beaten shore. He accordingly gave orders to weigh anchor and stand out to sea far enough to command a view of the hermitage and of the path leading to it. Much to his dismay, he saw a party of armed men approach and enter the boat. They rowed to the side of the caravel: and the governor, who was one of their number, demanded an assurance of his personal safety in case he boarded the vessel. This was given, readily enough: but still he seemed reluctant to trust himself within reach of Columbus. The Admiral then broke

forth into reproaches, declaring that the perfidy of the governor did wrong not only to the Spanish monarchs, whose representative Columbus was, but to the King of Portugal, whom Castaneda represented here. He stated in sonorous Spanish titles, his own rank and dignity, displayed his letters patent, with the royal seal of Castile affixed, and threatened him with the vengeance of Ferdinand and Isabella. Castaneda replied contemptuously, and the boat, after an hour's altercation, returned to shore.

Columbus feared that a war had broken out between Spain and Portugal since his departure from Palos, and that this was the explanation of the treatment which he had received. But whatever the reason, he did not have long to speculate; all his attention was required to keep the vessel safe. The weather became stormy again, and she was driven from her anchorage; not only was she short of hands, because of the detention of half her crew on shore, but the greater part of those who remained were landsmen and Indians, who were almost useless in navigating the vessel.

The evening of the 22nd, Columbus returned to his anchorage; for the storm had abated. Shortly afterward, a boat, containing two priests and a notary, as civil officers were called, put off from shore and approached the caravel. After considerable parleying, they came on board; and requested to see the papers of Columbus. These were readily shown; and the officials departed, satisfied. The next morning the sailors were liberated, and permitted to depart in their own boat.

During their detention, they had learned the reason for this action on the part of the governor. Jealous in the extreme of the sovereigns of Spain, since they had embraced an opportunity which his own craftiness and deceit had lost to him, he had given orders to all the governors of his outlying colonies to seize and detain Columbus wherever he should be met with. Castaneda had hoped, by courteous treatment, to allay any suspicions which Columbus might entertain, and then surprise and capture him while he was without the assistance of so many of his men; but the caution of Columbus had prevented this; and the Portuguese governor had to own himself beaten.

Two days later they set sail from St. Mary's, the wind being favorable for a direct passage to Spain. But this state of affairs did not long continue. They seemed to be repulsed, on their return, "from the very door of the house." Several days of stormy weather had been experienced when, on the 2nd of March, a squall struck the little vessel and rent her sails into ribbons. Again she scudded under bare poles; and again the crew, at the suggestion of Columbus, cast lots to see who should perform a pilgrimage. The devotee was to go to the shrine of Santa Maria de la Cueva in Huelva; and once more the lot fell upon Columbus. The devout Las Casas, remarking upon the fact that Columbus had drawn the lot for three pilgrimages out of the four, concluded that it was an intimation from God that these storms were all on his

account, to humble his pride, and show him how easily he might have been lost, with all knowledge of what he had done, had Providence so willed it. It is not improbable that Columbus himself took this view of it.

They saw various signs of the vicinity of land; but in such a storm as was raging, this only increased their fear. The tempest continued; and the light caravel seemed but the plaything of the angry winds and waves. During the first watch of the night of the 3rd, the cry of land was given; but by strong exertions they managed to keep to sea until daylight should point out a safe path.

They found themselves off the rock of Cintra, at the mouth of the Tagus; and although Columbus had good reason to doubt how he would be treated in Portugal, he had no choice but to bring his battered little vessel to land. He accordingly anchored opposite to Rastello, the crew returning hearty thanks to God for their escape from so many dangers. From the inhabitants of that part of the shore, who flocked to congratulate them upon what seemed a miraculous preservation, the seamen learned that this had been a remarkably stormy winter; and that many vessels had remained storm-bound in port for months, while many others had suffered shipwreck. Yet the frail and crazy bark *Nina* had crossed the broad and unknown Atlantic in safety, and reached port at last.

Columbus at once dispatched a courier with letters to his royal patrons; and another with a letter to the King of Portugal, asking permission to take his vessel to Lisbon, and assuring him that he had not been to the coast of Guinea or any other of the Portuguese possessions, but had reached India by sailing to the west.

Before this letter had reached its destination, indeed, the very day after he had anchored, Columbus received a message from the commander of a Portuguese man-of-war summoning him to give an account of himself and his vessel. The Admiral of the Indian Seas refused to leave his vessel at the bidding of any power but that of Castile, and so replied to the messengers. When the Portuguese officer learned what a voyage he had made, he visited him on board the caravel, and offered his services in any way in which they might be desired.

From this visit, and from the accounts given by the people living near the mouth of the Tagus, the news was transmitted to Lisbon, reaching the popular ear at almost the same time that the letter of Columbus was delivered to the King. The people were wild with excitement; since for a hundred years the chief glory of Portugal had been derived from her maritime explorations, and here was an achievement which threw into the shade their latest success, the doubling of the Cape of Good Hope.

As soon as the King received the letter, he dispatched a cavalier with an answer, inviting Columbus to Valparaiso, where the court then was; and or-

dering that everything which Columbus might require for himself, his men, or his ship, should be furnished at the expense of the royal treasury.

Columbus, remembering the treatment which he had received at the hands of this very monarch, was a little distrustful; but being already in his power, dared not show suspicion by declining the invitation. He went, accompanied only by his pilot; and was received with high honors. So anxious was the King to show him all possible respect that the visitor was commanded to be seated in the royal presence; an honor which generally was accorded only to royalty.



COLUMBUS BEFORE THE SOVEREIGNS OF PORTUGAL.

After the interview between them, in which Columbus gave an account of his voyage and of the lands which he had visited, the King held a conference

with some of his advisers. He was uneasy lest these discoveries should interfere with his claims of territory which had been granted him by a papal bull, of the land from Cape Non, on the coast of Africa, to the Indies; and his courtiers were only too ready to suggest that the islands which Columbus had discovered lay very near the Tercera Islands, and therefore rightfully belonged to Portugal.

It was even advised that Columbus should be prevented from returning to Spain or making more voyages of discovery, by the simple and effective means of putting an end to his life. It could be done, the wily advisers told the King, without any appearance of violence unbefitting the King; Columbus could be led to resent some remark, for his pride was evident to them all; this would lead to an altercation, such as could be settled, between gentlemen, only by an appeal to arms; and in the resulting duel the adventurer would be slain.

But this advice was less pleasing to the King than another bit of counsel. If he followed the leading of some of his courtiers, he would permit Columbus to depart for Spain, unmolested; for it was his duty as a prince to protect and further the journey of all who were driven by storms to seek shelter in his harbors. But if he should at once proceed to fit out an armament, and should send it to take possession of the countries which Columbus claimed to have discovered, it would require a war for Spain to dispossess him; and his right would be made all the stronger, before such war could be begun, by his having possession of the country in dispute.

Thus the King of Portugal and his Council first persuaded themselves that the countries discovered by Columbus rightfully belonged to Portugal—no difficult task, since they wished to believe it—and then contrived a plan by which, they thought, Spain and her envoy could be cheated out of the results of that envoy's genius and labor and peril.

In accordance with this plan, Columbus was treated with the most distinguished consideration by all connected with the Portuguese court. King John offered, if he preferred to enter Spain by land, to bear all the expenses connected with his journey, and to furnish a guard of honor such as was fitting for a personage of his rank and achievements. Columbus, however, declined this flattering offer, since the weather had become more calm; and put to sea March 13, arriving at Palos two days later, the day of the week being Friday.

If the day, nearly seven months and a half previous, when the little fleet set sail from Palos had been a season of general mourning, the day of the *Nina's* return was one of general rejoicing. There are but two important dates in the history of this Spanish seaport; one is August 3, 1492; the other is March 15, 1493.

Yet, although the bells were rung, the shops shut, and all business suspended, there was but one of the vessels that had returned in safety; one

had been wrecked, and the fate of the other was dreadfully uncertain. Of the mariners who had manned these vessels, thirty had been left on the strange shore which the expedition had discovered; about the same number were still battling with the ocean, in the *Pinta*, or were buried with her beneath its waters.

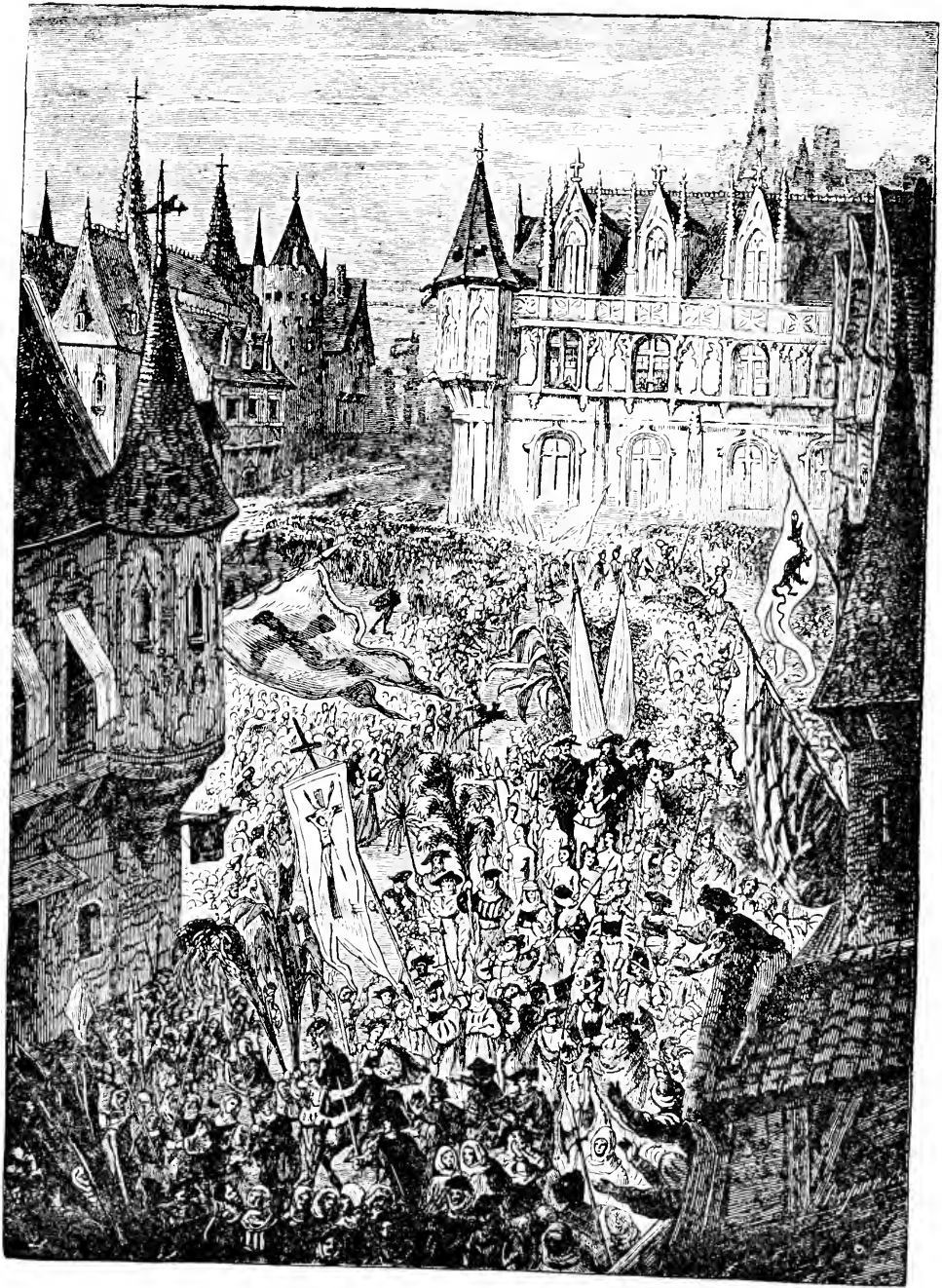
But this uncertainty was soon to be dispelled; for on the very day that Columbus arrived at Palos, and only a few hours later, the *Pinta* sailed up the river. Driven before the storm into the Bay of Biscay, Pinzon had succeeded in making the port of Bayonne. Confident that in a tempest which the stronger and more sea-worthy *Pinta* could hardly weather, the *Nina* must have perished, he wrote a letter to the rulers of Spain, announcing the discoveries which he had made; and requesting permission to come to court and communicate the particulars in person. Full of brilliant anticipations of a triumphant entry into his native town, he then set sail for Palos.

The bells were still ringing when he entered the harbor; but he knew no reason for this glad demonstration until he saw, riding at anchor before him, the battered and tempest-tossed *Nina*, which he had thought was at the bottom of the Atlantic. At once all his bright hopes were dashed to the ground; and fearful of being called to account by Columbus for his desertion off Cuba, he caused his boat to be lowered, and landed privately; keeping well out of sight until he learned that Columbus had left Palos.

Concealed in the home which he had dreamed would be the scene of such honor, he at last received the answer of Ferdinand and Isabella to his letter. It reproached him with endeavoring to take to himself the honor which rightfully belonged to another, and ended by forbidding him to come to court. It was too much for the hardy and adventurous mariner; and he who perhaps had done more than any one man to make the expedition of Columbus possible died a few days afterward, the victim of deep chagrin. "His story shows how one lapse from duty may counterbalance the merits of a thousand services; how one moment of weakness may mar the beauty of a whole life of virtue; and how important it is for a man, under all circumstances, to be true not merely to others, but to himself."

Columbus had gone to Seville, shortly after landing, there to await the commands of Ferdinand and Isabella; he had taken with him six of the Indians who had voluntarily accompanied him to Spain; one having died on the voyage, and three being left, ill, at Palos.

At Seville he received an answer to his letter, addressed to "Don Christopher Columbus, Our Admiral of the Ocean Sea, and Viceroy and Governor of the Islands Discovered in the Indies." It is said that the Spaniards are particularly fond of long and sounding titles; and this address would surely have satisfied the most ambitious of them. The contents of the letter were as flattering as the superscription was imposing. The sovereigns expressed



THE TRIUMPHAL PROGRESS.

their unbounded delight at the services rendered by Columbus, and requested him to repair to court at once, to make arrangements for a second voyage. If there was anything which they could do to expedite such a journey before he could come to them, he was to send them word, and it should be done. They desired to take advantage of the approaching summer, since that was the most favorable season for such journeys of discovery.

His journey to Barcelona, where the court then was, was like the triumphal progress of a sovereign; never before had a man sprung from the people received such honors from Spaniards; for never before had any man done such service to the Crown and the empire. Arrived at Barcelona, he was welcomed by such a crowd of spectators of the brilliant cavalcade which escorted him, that they could hardly make their way through the streets. The King and Queen had ordered their throne to be placed in public under a rich canopy of brocade; and seated here, attended by their son and the highest nobles of the court, they awaited the coming of the discoverer. As he approached the throne, they rose, as if receiving one of their own rank; and as in the court of Portugal, so in the presence of the proud and punctilious Spanish monarchs, Columbus was actually permitted to be seated. To us, such a distinction appears trivial; but it did not seem so to those who witnessed the reception of Columbus by the sovereigns whom he served.

An account of the voyage was given their majesties, and the natives and other spoil acquired duly displayed. When Columbus had finished speaking, the King and Queen, followed, of course, by all present, fell upon their knees; and raising their clasped hands, poured forth a thanksgiving to the Power which had so blessed the enterprise. The emotion of those assembled was too deep for ordinary acclamations; and when the prayer was concluded, there was a solemn silence, until the voices of the choir of the royal chapel, accompanied by instruments, rose in the sacred strains of the psalm, "*Te Deum Laudamus*." Their thoughts were borne upward on the swelling strains, as though, says Las Casas, "in that hour they communicated with celestial delights."

It would be tedious to tell of the round of entertainments prepared in honor of Columbus by the obsequious courtiers, and the honors which they strove to shower upon him. Everywhere that he went, he was the object of a respect so profound that its like had never been shown to any man not of royal descent. Yet there were not wanting some who were meanly jealous of him, and who asserted that his service was but small; had he not discovered these countries, there were yet others in Spain who were capable of doing so; that his success was due simply to a series of lucky accidents, which might have befallen any adventurous mariner. At one of the banquets given in his honor, a courtier had the hardihood to suggest this to Columbus himself, by asking if he thought there was no one else in Spain who could have accom-



RECEPTION OF COLUMBUS BY FERDINAND AND ISABELLA.

plished the discovery. For answer, Columbus took an egg, and asked his would-be detractor to set it on end; saying that it was an easy thing to do. The courtier tried to balance it, but failed; meantime, the attention of all present was attracted to this "most excellent fooling," which seemed to be directed by the great man himself. When the trial was ended, and the proud Spaniard acknowledged that he could not do it, one after another, believing he saw wherein lay the difficulty, and encouraged by the amused smile of Columbus and his assurance that it was easy enough, begged leave to make the trial. One after another they essayed it; and one after another they failed, and were obliged to give up. The discoverer took the egg in his hand, and knocked one end against the table until it stood firmly upon the broken part. No words were needed to complete the lesson; the envious belittler of a great man's fame had learned that there are things easy enough to do when one knows how, but impossible to those who have not learned, unless natural capacity supplies the place of teaching.

The story is as well known as that later one of George Washington and the cherry tree; but it is better authenticated than that. The simplicity of the reproof is quite in accordance with the character of Columbus, who was eminently practical, and always ready to use the means at hand, no matter how trifling.

Although it was supposed that the land discovered by Columbus was a part of the territory of a people who had made a considerable advance in civilization, the Spanish sovereigns felt not the slightest doubt of their right to take possession of it, and appoint governors and other officials as they saw fit. This was in accordance with the principle which the rulers of Europe had established for themselves during the Crusades, that Christian princes have undoubted rights over all countries not Christian. This principle, highly satisfactory to those who were benefitted by it, combined with the principle of the right of discovery, sustained Ferdinand and Isabella in their intention of taking possession of the Indies. It was further believed that the Pope, as the head of the Christian world, possessed the right to assign these territories of paynim peoples to the Christian nations. In accordance with this belief, the Spanish rulers, to strengthen their right of discovery, applied to the Pope for a bull to sanction their further proceedings.

This request was not made without an intimation that the Spaniards scarcely considered it necessary, but regarded it merely as a ceremony due from them to show their respect for the Holy See. Thus politely informed that if he did not give his consent to their holding and colonizing these lands, they would do so without his permission, the Pope granted the request, and issued the desired bull. To prevent any conflict between Spain and Portugal regarding the countries which the Holy Father had granted to them respectively, it was decided that an imaginary line to be drawn from pole



COLUMBUS AND THE EGG.

to pole a hundred leagues to the west of the Azores, should be the boundary between their possessions; all to the east of this was to belong to Portugal; while all land to the west of it was to belong to the Crown of Spain.

While these negotiations were being carried on, Ferdinand and Isabella exerted themselves to honor Columbus to the utmost. The outcome of their efforts seems to have been the assignment of a coat of arms, in which the group of islands surrounded by waves, which was the design of the heralds, was quartered with the royal Castle and Lion, which Isabella bore on her shield in allusion to the names of her two kingdoms, Castile and Leon. To this device, a motto was afterward added, a Spanish couplet which is, translated into English prose: "To Castile and Leon Columbus gave a New World."

It took time to procure the papal bull; and the Spanish monarchs were not willing to delay their preparations for another voyage. They proceeded with the work, first organizing it so as to insure regularity and dispatch in transacting the business relating to this vast new empire. Juan Rodriguez de Fonseca, Archdeacon of Seville, was appointed to superintend them, and finally, after several ecclesiastical promotions in Spain, made Patriarch of the Indies. Francisco Pinelo was associated with him as treasurer, and Juan de Soria as comptroller. These officials were to be located at Seville; although they also had charge of the custom-house at Cadiz, where ships from the New World were required to land. An office was also ordered to be established in Hispaniola, under the direction of the Admiral. An accountant was to sail with each vessel, and strict reports were to be rendered to the sovereigns of the amount of cargo carried; since they were responsible for the expenses, and received all the emoluments, except for that small proportion which they had agreed to allow to Columbus.

The narrow and jealous spirit of the Spaniards was shown in the restrictions which were put upon emigration and commerce; for a long time no one but subjects of Isabella were permitted to trade in the Indies discovered by Columbus; he had given the New World to Castile and Leon, and to no other country.

Although Ferdinand was called the Most Catholic King, and Isabella was noted for her piety and devotion, the means which they employed or permitted to furnish this armament seem to us to smack of the grossest injustice. We have seen that on the first voyage they had ordered that men and vessels should be pressed into service when it was found that they could be obtained in no other way; and now again they ordered that Columbus and Fonseca should select whatever vessels pleased them, and pay to the owners what seemed to the Admiral and the Archdeacon a fair price, regardless of whether the owner desired to sell or not. The same order was given in regard to the supplies of provisions, arms, and ammunition; and they were further author-

ized to compel any officer or seaman who might add to the efficiency of the service to embark on the fleet at a reasonable pay.

The revenue for this expedition was drawn partly from the church tithes; two-thirds of that revenue being set aside for the purpose. The Jews had been banished from the kingdom during the preceding year, their jewels and many other valuables being confiscated; and these were now sold, and the proceeds applied to the expenses of the expedition. The deficiency which existed after these resources had been exhausted was supplied by a loan.

Twelve zealous and able churchmen were to sail with the Admiral, to assist in the conversion of the heathen inhabitants. The six Indians, also, having been duly baptized with great state and ceremony, were intended to assist in this work among their countrymen; but one of them remained behind, at the request of Prince Juan, the heir to the throne, as a member of his household. He died not long afterward, however: the first of his race, says the pious Spanish historian, to enter the kingdom of Heaven.



COLUMBUS RELATING HIS DISCOVERIES TO HIS FRIEND, FATHER PEREZ.

Seventeen vessels were prepared for this second expedition to the western lands; all kinds of skilled workmen were provided for every need of the new colony; domestic animals of all varieties were secured, and there was a plentiful stock of seeds and plants, as well as of the special kinds of merchandise for traffic with the natives. Provisions, ammunition, arms, and medicines were a matter of course. The number of persons engaged in the enterprise was at first limited to a thousand; but so great was the enthusiasm respecting the New World, and so vast was the army of adventurers, whose

occupation had been gone since the Moorish wars and the late contests with France had ended, that the sovereigns found it necessary to raise the limit to twelve hundred. These enlisted without pay, trusting to the fabulous amount of wealth which they believed to exist in the Indies to repay every exertion which they might make. So intense was the desire of many to go, that they hid themselves on the vessels until after the departure; and the real number on board the ships, including these stowaways, was not far short of fifteen hundred.

Not all the requisitions which Columbus made for men and supplies were honored without question by the officials appointed for the superintendence of these affairs. Both Fonseca and Soria demurred to various demands of his; but an appeal to the royal authority always ended in Columbus being upheld, and the objecting officials being commanded to furnish all that he might desire. It was the golden prime of his favor with the sovereigns; for a little while he was to be the man whom the king delighteth to honor; and then his star was to set at the Spanish court, to rise again, after a short obscurity, over the wide world.

CHAPTER IV.

THE SECOND VOYAGE OF COLUMBUS.

The Great Fleet—Precautions of Columbus—The Outward Voyage—Traces of Civilization—Evidences of Cannibalism—Hostilities—Doubts Confirmed—At Anchorage—The Fate of the Garrison—Story of the Natives—Attacked by Caribs—A New Colony—The Building of Isabella—Sickness—Exploration of the Island—Ojeda's Expedition—Return of Vessels—Slave-Trading Proposed by Columbus—His Reasons—Dissatisfaction—A Conspiracy Discovered—Action of Columbus—Columbus Explores the Island—Fort St. Thomas—Necessities of the Colony—"Gentlemen" at Work—A Voyage of Discovery—Welcome Reports—Cuba Voted a Part of the Mainland—Dangerous Illness of Columbus—Return to Isabella—Adventures of Bartholomew Columbus—Margarite's Rebellion—Enemies—Siege of St. Thomas—Ojeda's Daring Enterprise—Spanish Cunning vs. Indian Cunning—Steel Bracelets—Spanish Cunning Wins—Condition of Colony—An Indian War—Victory—The Conqueror's Conditions—A Desperate Effort—Misrepresentations of Margarite—Isabella's Views on Slavery—Aguado's Arrival—Warieness of Columbus—Discovery of Gold Mines—Romantic Story—Return to Spain.

WHEN, in the early part of August, 1492, three small vessels sailed from the port of Palos, the men on board of them were regarded as doomed to be lost at sea, and the leader of the expedition was regarded as a foolhardy adventurer, who had succeeded in exciting the cupidity of the sovereigns until, for the hope of visionary gain, they were willing to imperil these vessels. Now, he was the great discoverer of a new route to the opulent Indies, the friend and favored officer of great sovereigns; while his followers were the most fortunate of mortals in being permitted to seek these regions of riches incalculable.

The fleet, as we have seen, consisted of seventeen vessels; three of which were of the class called carracks, of about one hundred tons' burden each; two of the caravels were much larger than the others; and there was not a vessel of them all that was not far superior, in its sea-going qualities, to the crazy bark in which the great Admiral had made the homeward voyage.

Leaving Cadiz at sunrise on the 25th of September, they reached the Canaries October 1, and remained there several days, taking on board a number of domestic animals in addition to those already provided, and seeds of lemons, oranges, and such other tropical fruits as seemed to Columbus appropriate to the climate of the islands which he had visited. Before leaving these islands, Columbus delivered to the commander of each vessel sealed orders as to the course to be pursued; these orders to be opened only in case the vessels should become separated. He pursued this course in order to prevent the path to the New World from becoming generally known;

for he feared lest adventurers of other nationalities, and particularly the Portuguese, would follow in his steps should the road once become familiar, and rob the Spanish rulers of the sovereignty and emoluments which justly belonged to them. It was the thirteenth, however, before the wind proved favorable for their westward voyage; and on that day they set sail from the Canaries.

The journey was not attended by any misfortunes, such as had marked the recent homeward voyage. Toward the latter part of October they were considerably alarmed by a storm, accompanied by the vivid lightning and heavy thunder of the tropics; this lasted for four hours; but they were reassured when they saw the lambent flames playing about the masts: with the superstition of the time, they said that St. Elmo appeared on the mast, with seven lighted candles. Having seen this appearance, they chanted litanies and orisons, confident that when St. Elmo showed himself in the storm there would be no damage done.

Sunday, November 3, land was descried; and because it was seen on Sunday, *dies Domini*, Columbus named the island Dominica. Six other islands were seen during the day, on one of which he landed to take formal possession of the archipelago in the name of Spain.

Continuing their course, they landed the next day on an island that Columbus named Guadaloupe, in fulfillment of a promise to the monks of Our Lady of Guadaloupe in Estramadura to call some newly discovered place after their convent. The natives fled at their approach, in such haste that some of them even left their children behind them. The huts they found constructed in a similar manner to those of the other islands which Columbus had visited; but much to his surprise, he found in one of them an iron pan, the first bit of that metal which he had seen in the New World. In another house was the stern-post of a vessel, which was very much like those of European manufacture. Columbus wondered much to see this, and was at a loss to know how it had been obtained. Had it been brought from some country near by, where the people were more civilized, as he was certain that the subjects of Kublai Khan were? Or was it the sole remnant of some unfortunate vessel which had been driven out to sea from some voyage along the coast of Europe or Africa, and lost, its fragments drifting to this distant shore? It surely could not be the stern-post of that vessel of his own which had been wrecked off Hispaniola, for the parts of that had been used in the construction of the fortress, toward which they were presently to continue their voyage.

But the most horrifying sight which they beheld, was the evidence of the cannibalism of the inhabitants; human skulls were used as vases and household utensils; and other human remains were present in abundance. Fortunately for the crew of the boat that was sent to land, the men of the island

were absent on one of the predatory expeditions by which they terrorized the neighboring islands; and only women and boys remained to defend their homes. This much was ascertained from several women and a boy, who were captured, and who were able to communicate with them, although imperfectly, through one of the Indians who had been to Spain and returned on this voyage.



EVIDENCES OF CANNIBALISM.

Much alarm was occasioned by the tidings that the captain of one of the caravels was missing, together with eight of his men. Every effort was made

to find them; and when search proved unavailing, signal guns were fired to attract their attention. They did not make their appearance for several days; when they told a pitiful story, confirmed by their haggard looks and exhausted strength, of being lost in the impenetrable forest, and wandering about, unable to find their way back until they at last reached the shore; and by following that for a considerable distance, had come within sight of the fleet. Although the account which they gave of their sufferings was evidently true, Columbus ordered them to be placed under arrest; for they had left their vessel without leave and it was necessary to maintain the strictest discipline if the order of the expedition was to be preserved.

While the fleet had been waiting their return, several women, who were captives of the fierce Caribs that inhabited this island, had sought shelter from their harsh masters in the ships of Columbus, and had found sympathy and assistance. These were on board when he set sail Nov. 10; and he had agreed to return them to their homes.

Off the island, to which he gave the name of Santa Cruz, a number of Spaniards, who had been sent on shore to procure water, and to get such information as they could, were attacked while returning to the fleet, by a canoe-load of natives. The white men endeavored to protect themselves with their bucklers; but the long arrows of the Indians pierced these shields through and through, and two of the Spaniards were wounded by the shafts.

Approaching that island now known as Porto Rico, he learned that it was the native country of most of those who had sought refuge on board his ships. He landed and spent two days here; but the natives had fled in terror as soon as they saw the squadron, and it was exceedingly difficult to persuade them to return. Finally, after cruising for some days among these islands, Columbus and his captains proceeded toward Hispaniola, which was to be the end of their voyage. Here they would find their comrades who had elected to remain in the New World; and here they would find what progress had been made in trading with the natives.

They arrived off the eastern extremity of the island Nov. 22, and followed the shore for a short distance before any attempt was made to land. Then a boat was sent ashore, the crew of which had been detailed to bury the body of a sailor who had died of a wound received during the skirmish which has been mentioned. Here also a number of natives came on board, inviting Columbus to land, and promising to procure him all the gold which he might desire. He was only anxious, however, to reach La Navidad, and dismissed them with presents and kind words.

Arrived at the gulf now called Semana, he sent ashore one of the Indians who had accompanied him to Spain, and who was considered converted to Christianity, having been baptized. The native was loaded with trinkets of all kinds, and instructed to make friends with his countrymen in the name

of the white men, and induce them to meet the Admiral in council at La Navidad; but whether he forgot the promises made while a captive, when once he had regained his liberty, or whether he was robbed of all his wealth of trinkets, and perhaps murdered was never known: for nothing more was seen or heard of him.

As several of the mariners were ranging along the coast, they found the bodies of a man and a boy, but so far decomposed that they could not tell if they were Spaniards or natives. The next day, however, their worst doubts were confirmed; for two other bodies were found, one of which was certainly a European, as was seen by the beard.

What had happened to the fortress and garrison of La Navidad? The frank and fearless manner of the natives, who came in numbers to visit the vessels, forbade the supposition that they had been massacred by the Indians; yet he could not explain the finding of these two bodies in the wild forest.

Arriving late on the evening of the 27th opposite the harbor of La Navidad, he was obliged to cast anchor for the night, on account of the dangerous reefs, which he feared to pass in the darkness. But he determined to communicate at once to the garrison the glad tidings that their friends had arrived. He accordingly ordered two cannon to be fired, hoping to hear an answering report from the shore. But as the echo of his own guns died away, there was only the breaking of the waves to be heard through the stillness of the night.

About midnight, a canoe approached the Admiral's vessel, and after the Indians in it were sure that Columbus was on board, they entered the ship. One of them who said that he was a cousin of Guacanagari, brought as a present two masks ornamented with gold. He informed the Admiral that several of the Spaniards had died of sickness; others had fallen in a quarrel among themselves; and others had removed to another part of the island, and married Indian women. Guacanagari had been attacked by Caonabo, the cacique of the fierce tribe that inhabited the gold-bearing region of Cibao; the friendly chief had been wounded, his village had been burned, and he now lay, helpless by reason of his injury, in a neighboring hamlet.

Some difficulty was experienced in making out the story of this Indian; for the only interpreter, the sole survivor of those Indians who had made the journey to Spain, was a native of another island, and spoke another dialect of the language common to many tribes. But this news relieved the mind of Columbus of one fear: whatever had happened to the garrison of La Navidad, Guacanagari had not been treacherous, but was worthy of the confidence which the Admiral had reposed in him.

The Indian envoys departed in the night, after making many promises that Guacanagari would visit the Admiral in person in the morning; and the mariners anxiously awaited the dawn, that they might learn how many of the garrison remained at the fort.

They waited in vain for the promised visit from the cacique; and no other Indians in their canoes thronged the harbor, as they had been wont to do when the Admiral first sought shelter from his wrecked vessel here. Finally, Columbus sent a boat ashore to reconnoiter; the crew at once sought the fortress. The ditch had been partially filled with the debris of the ruin; the palisades had been beaten down; here and there, among the charred remnants of the walls, they found broken chests, spoiled provisions, and the ragged remains of European garments. Now and then they caught sight of an Indian in the distance, watching them from his lurking-place behind a tree; but not one approached the search party.

Fully assured that the people of Guacanagari had wrought this destruction of the fortress, the party returned and reported to Columbus. He went on shore, to see for himself what was the condition of the colony. He found that they had given a correct report; and the minutest search failed to reveal any traces of a human body in the ruins. Returning to the vessel, he gave orders that guns should be discharged at regular intervals; for he thought that if they had found shelter anywhere in the neighborhood, they would be attracted to the shore by these sounds.

But not one came. Further search revealed the bodies of eleven men, buried in different places, at some distance from the fort; which were known by their clothing to be Europeans. These men had been dead for some time, for the grass was beginning to grow upon their graves.

The Indians, after hovering timidly at a distance for some time, were finally induced to approach nearer, upon assurances that they would be allowed to depart when it pleased them. From them the story of the first European colony in the New World was learned by degrees. Scarcely had the Admiral sailed away, that the men whom he had left behind forgot his prudent counsels, and surrendered themselves to their vices. The avaricious seized upon the ornaments of the natives wherever they were found; the sensual were not content with the privileges allowed them by Guacanagari, but gave their passions loose rein; and they quarreled among themselves with such fierceness that the wondering Indians, who had thought them the children of Heaven, came to have an entirely different idea about their origin.

Nor did they obey those wise orders of the Admiral, that they should maintain a military discipline, and keep within the bounds of the territory governed by Guacanagari. The two lieutenants sought to make themselves equal with the commander; and failing in this, withdrew from the fortress, and set off for Cibao. This part of the island was governed by the Carib chief Caonabo, who had invaded the country, and finally settled there with his fierce followers. He was held in great fear by the peaceable natives; but he knew very well that his reign of terror would be over if the white men, with their arms of thunder and lightning, should establish themselves in the island.

Accordingly, no sooner had these rebels ventured into his territory, than he went upon the war-path, captured them, and put them to death.

Having full information of the original strength of the garrison, and knowing what proportion of the men had fallen at the hands of his tribe, Caonabo resolved to attack the fortress. He made a league with the cacique of Marien, who dwelt to the westward of Guacanagari; and arrived in the vicinity of the friendly chief's village without his presence being suspected. Only ten men were in the fortress; the others were scattered around in various houses of the village; and even the handful who remained at their post maintained no guard.

The Caribs are supposed to have migrated from the mainland of North America; and we find this attack upon the Spaniards much like the attacks upon English colonies within the bounds of the present United States. There was a sudden burst of frightful yells; and before the startled sleepers realized what had happened, the whole place was wrapped in flames, every point of egress barred by a phalanx of painted savages. Eight of the Spaniards rushed toward the sea; with what intent, we know not; but plunging into the waves as a refuge from their savage foes, they were drowned. The others were massacred.

Guacanagari and his people suffered for having been friends to the whites; their village was attacked at the same time as the fortress; their huts were burned to the ground, several of his people killed, and the cacique himself wounded.

Columbus visited the wounded cacique at his place of refuge, and the chief himself repaid the visit by coming to the fleet. The fact that although he claimed his wound was very painful, no external evidence could be perceived, excited the suspicions of some of the followers of Columbus; and Guacanagari, seeing that he was not regarded with full confidence, as on previous occasions, returned to shore, and disappeared, with all his followers, during the night. This gave new force to their suspicions; and Guacanagari was generally regarded as the traitor and the destroyer of the fortress.

The crowded condition of the ships made it necessary for the Spaniards to land as soon as possible; but the associations connected with this beautiful point were not such as to make them desirous of rebuilding La Navidad. They accordingly weighed anchor, intending to proceed to a point at some distance; but, compelled by the weather to put in at a harbor about ten leagues to the east of Monte Christi, the Admiral was struck with the advantages and beauty of the situation, and gave orders to begin the building of a fortress and residences.

It was the middle of December; but in that land where there is no winter, the trees were in leaf, and the birds were singing as in spring. To the men who had been shut up on board ship for nearly three months, the beauty of

this teeming plain must indeed have appeared almost heavenly. An encampment was at once formed about the point of land, protected on one side by the impervious forest, and on the other by a natural rampart of rocks; and the various artificers who had been brought from Spain busied themselves in erecting the houses of the new city, Isabella.

Streets were laid out, and the plaza, that indispensable part of a Spanish town, was marked out. A church, a public storehouse, and a residence for the Admiral, were begun, all built of stone. Private houses were built of reeds, wood, plaster, or any other material which ingenuity might suggest. For a short time, they all worked with feverish energy. Then the enthusiasm ran its course, and work became more distasteful. Many of them had suffered much from seasickness, having never been accustomed to the sea; and these needed rest and relaxation, rather than unremitting labor. Others, again, had been victims of scurvy, having lived so long upon salt provisions and mouldy sea-biscuit. Another source of disease was found in the unwonted exposure, since everybody could not be housed at once; and in the rank exhalations of that moist, warm earth which produced such luxuriant vegetation.

Ill in body and dispirited in mind, finding that gold was to be obtained only in small quantities and by dint of hard work, the adventurers were disheartened at the very outset. Columbus himself did not escape the prevailing evils, but was stretched on a sickbed for several weeks. There is nothing like necessity, however, for calling forth the best powers of the mind; and conscious that the success of the expedition lay almost entirely in his hands, Columbus felt that he must succeed. Thus, although the cares and responsibilities and distress regarding the destruction of the fortress weighed far more heavily on him than on any other, he did not give up; but continued, with indomitable energy, to direct from his sickbed the building of the city, and to give a general supervision to the affairs of the expedition.

But this was not all that he had to think of. He had expected that when he returned to Hispaniola, he would find that the garrison of La Navidad had collected a considerable amount of treasure by trading with the natives; or that, at least, they would have ascertained where the richest mines lay, and where were the sources of wealthy traffic. The destruction of the fortress had of course ended all such hopes; but there were the ships, waiting to make the return voyage, and there was for their cargo no such store of treasure as his royal patrons expected to receive. There was nothing to send in them.

He decided that the island should be thoroughly explored; convinced that Cibao was but another form of the name Cipango, he was sure that there must be rich and populous cities somewhere in the interior; and this terrible cacique, Caonabo, whose name signified "The Lord of the Golden House," was the very potentate from whom these stores of gold must be obtained.

As leader of the exploring party he chose Alonzo de Ojeda, a Spanish cavalier who had gained a great reputation for courage during the Moorish wars; but whose bravery seems, to the dispassionate eyes of the nineteenth century, rather foolhardy daring than true courage; for true courage does not court danger; it only faces it calmly when unavoidable.

To such a man, however, this expedition into the interior was extremely alluring; and the more that was told him about the terrible reputation of Caonabo, the better pleased was he to see him in his mountain fastnesses.

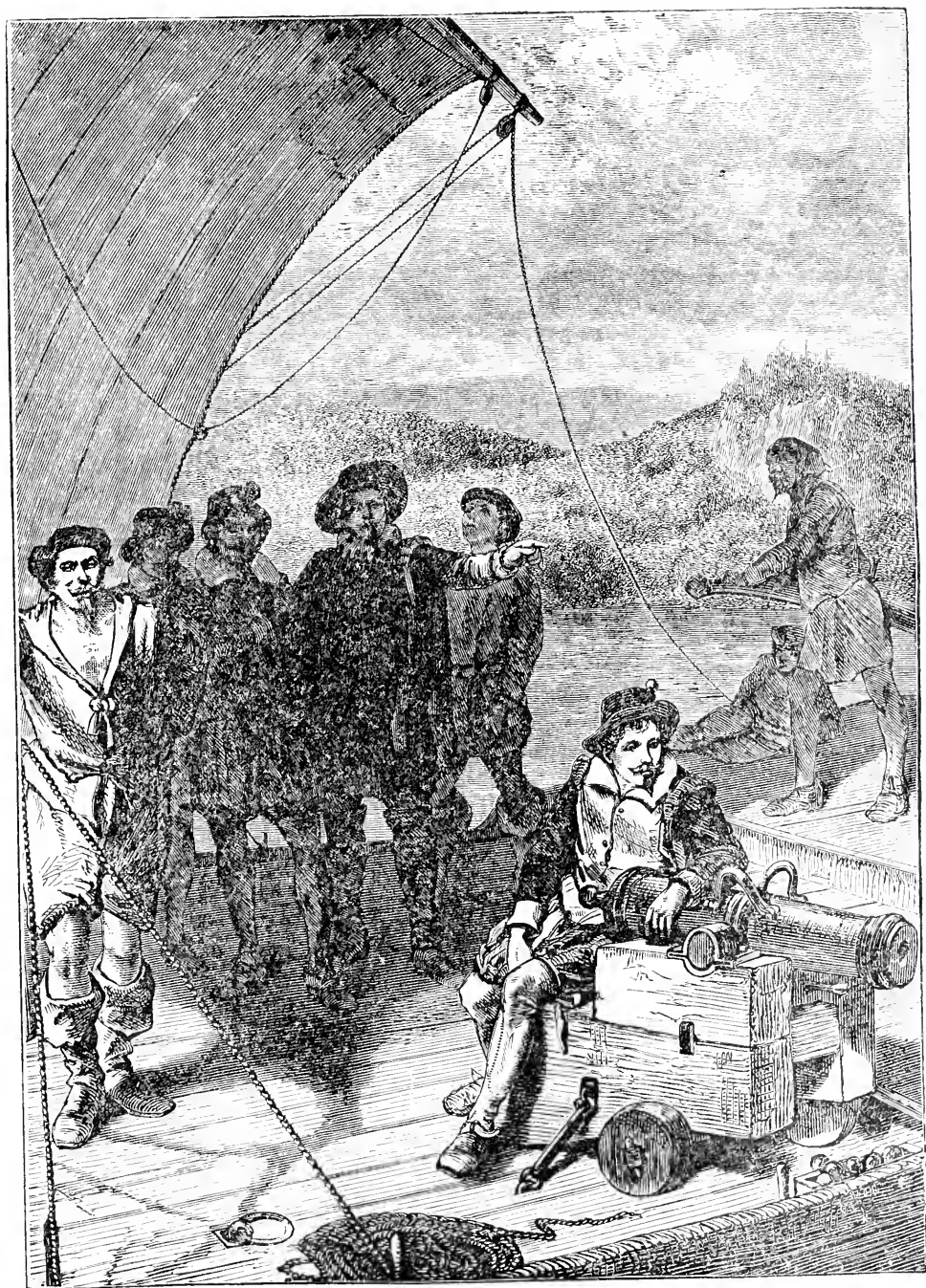
Many difficulties, resulting from the nature of the country, were encountered before they reached the mountains; but they were not molested by the natives. The Indians, on the contrary, appeared to welcome them with kindness; the dreaded Caonabo was absent in some other part of his dominions, and only women and children were left to receive the strangers.

Of course, they found no traces of the rich and magnificent cities which they had expected to behold; but they saw what seemed to them unmistakable signs of the vast wealth of these regions. The sands of the mountain-streams glittered with particles of gold; nuggets of considerable size were sometimes found in the beds of these rivulets; and rocks were discovered, richly seamed and streaked with the yellow metal.

While Ojeda was absent on this exploring expedition, Columbus had sent another party, on a similar errand, in another direction, under the leadership of a young cavalier named Gorvalan. Both parties returned about the same time, bringing glowing accounts of the riches of the island. Columbus now felt assured that it was only necessary to explore the mines of Cibao thoroughly, in order to open up inexhaustible sources of wealth, and his sanguine expectations were fully shared by his followers.

He dispatched twelve of the vessels of his fleet to Spain, sending such specimens of the wealth of the island as had been obtained; and also, specimens of all the fruits, or plants which appeared to be valuable, or were particularly curious. The natives captured in the Caribbee Islands were also sent, with a recommendation that they should be carefully instructed in the Spanish language and the Christian faith.

Columbus asked that further supplies might be sent him; as their provisions were already growing scanty, and much of their wine had been lost through the badness of the casks. The colony was also in need of medicines, clothing, and arms. In addition to these, workmen skilled in mining and smelting and purifying ore would be required if the teeming mines of Cibao were to be worked; while horses were needed to use on the public works and in tilling the ground, and also for military service; for the Indians, unaccustomed to any but the smallest quadrupeds, showed the greatest fear of the immense beasts, horses and horned cattle, which the Spaniards had brought in their wonderful ships.



SAILING AMONG THE ISLANDS.

Columbus had devised a scheme for furnishing the island with live stock which appears to us simply inhuman; to him, devout Christian as he was, wishing for nothing more strongly than to advance the interests of the Church, to free the Holy Land from the domination of the infidels, and to bring the whole world into the Christian fold, its advantages seemed to be so great that there was no question of right or wrong to be considered. He proposed that an exchange should be established, by which Spanish merchants were to send live stock direct to Isabella, and receive in payment therefor slaves captured from the Caribs. A duty was to be levied on every slave so traded, for the benefit of the royal purse.

The Admiral, thinking that he had reached the opulent countries of which Marco Polo had told, had long promised his royal patrons a large revenue from them. Trusting in these promises, they had incurred great expense in fitting out the second expedition. It was doubtful whether, at least during his absence, they would continue to grant money to pay expenses, where they had hoped to derive an income. He felt bound to suggest some way in which an income could be derived from the new countries, without a long and tedious waiting till the mines should be developed. This was one reason which he had for making this suggestion.

But it was not the one which made it seem right to his own mind. To many persons of that time, an observance of the forms prescribed by the Church appeared to be enough: it mattered little what the course pursued in the ordinary transactions of life might be. Columbus was one of these persons; to him, as to thousands of others, it seemed that if the Indians received a certain amount of instruction, and were then baptized, they would become by that fact Christians, and would be assured of Paradise. If, then, these savage islanders, who were in their own country only a perpetual menace to their peaceable neighbors, could be taken to Spain, even as slaves, and there taught the doctrines of the Christian Church, and be brought within its fold by baptism, surely the good that was done would far outweigh the evil which lay in slavery.

Besides, it must be remembered that slavery was not then regarded as it is now. One great source of the revenue which Portugal derived from her African possessions was the sale of slaves, captured on the coast of that continent. Columbus had doubtless made many voyages to Africa, had perhaps engaged in this very traffic; and did not regard a human chattel as a thing of which humanity cannot approve.

The fleet sailed February 2, 1494. It was the intention of Columbus to explore the island in person as soon as possible; but at the time that the twelve vessels departed he was still confined to his bed. He was busily making arrangements for the expedition, however, in spite of being thus disabled; when his attention was engrossed by affairs of more pressing importance.

The men who had worked with much ardor at first upon the new city soon found their enthusiasm considerably cooled; and every day's work after that increased their discontent; yet so strict was the rule of the Admiral that they were compelled, unless actually sick, to keep on with their task. They had also expected to find gold much more readily than they had done; and were correspondingly disappointed at the news that the mines lay some distance in the interior, and would have to be carefully and laboriously worked. The departure of the fleet at this time brought home to them the idea of their own country, and although obliged to serve out their term of enlistment, they were already sick of their bargain.

When such a state of general dissatisfaction with the "powers that be" exists in any community, there is sure to be a leader ready. In this case it was Bernard Diaz de Pisa, who had come out as comptroller with the fleet, and who was so puffed up with his own importance that he had more than once questioned the authority of the Admiral, and had met with the result which might have been expected. Sore at such insults to his importance, he readily found followers among the dissatisfied; and proposed to them that they should seize upon the five remaining ships and return to Spain. Once there, they could easily explain their desertion, for the Admiral, as they all knew well, was overbearing and unjust, and had grossly misrepresented the wealth of these islands in the reports rendered to the sovereigns. Among these malcontents was an assayer named Fermin Cedo, who obstinately insisted that there was no gold in the island; or at least none in such quantities as to pay for the working. He refused to be convinced by the specimens that he saw, declaring that the large grains had been melted, and in some cases represented the accumulations of several generations; and that the largest pieces were far from being pure. This opinion of an expert, in which many of them, from sheer discontent against the Admiral, were ready to concur, would justify them, as they considered, in their complaint that Columbus had procured their enlistment by false representations, and was still endeavoring to deceive the sovereigns; and Diaz de Pisa boasted loudly that he had sufficient influence to obtain them a hearing at court.

Fortunately, this conspiracy was discovered before it had made dangerous headway. The ringleaders were at once, by the orders of Columbus, arrested, and a general search for incriminating evidence instituted. In this search, they found, concealed in the buoy of one of the ships, a memorial in the handwriting of Diaz, full of the grossest misrepresentations of the Admiral.

Although the conspiracy was thus proven, Columbus did not take harsh measures. He punished some of the inferior mutineers, but not as severely as their mutinous conduct had deserved; Diaz was confined on board one of the ships, until it should be convenient to send him to Spain for trial.

But while thus lightly passing over a very grave offense, Columbus did not

fail to take measures to prevent it from being repeated. He had all the guns and naval munitions taken out of four of the vessels and stored in the fifth, which was placed under the charge of men in whom he had entire confidence.

Mild as was the punishment, and grave as was the offense, this occurrence was the beginning of much of Columbus' future misfortune. Whatever might be the extent of his services to science, or however highly he might be regarded by the sovereigns, he was still, to these narrow-minded Spaniards, a foreigner. He stood alone; but every man that he punished had relatives and friends in Spain, who thenceforth lost no opportunity of defaming the great discoverer.

March 12, having attended to the punishment of those concerned in the mutiny, and set affairs to running smoothly again, Columbus set out on his journey to Cibao. His brother, Don Diego, was left in command of the settlement; but the force at his disposal was but a weak one. Every healthy person who could possibly be spared accompanied the Admiral; for he expected to form an establishment for working the mines, and besides, needed an escort sufficiently strong to assert the rights of the Spanish monarchs against the possible protests of the warlike savages who ruled Cibao.

Columbus penetrated to a point about eighteen leagues from Isabella, where he decided to build a strong fortress of wood, for the protection of such workmen as might be employed in the mines about this point. This fortress he named St. Thomas, intending the name to be a rebuke to those who declared that they would not believe in the golden treasures of Cibao until they had seen and touched them. While the Admiral remained to superintend the building of this fortress, he sent a young cavalier, with a sufficient party, to explore the neighboring country. Having received a most favorable report from Luxan, the leader of this party, he placed Pedro Margarite in command of St. Thomas, with a garrison of fifty-six men, and returned to Isabella, which he reached March 29.

He received here the most favorable reports of the results which their labor in tilling the ground had produced. All were alike astonished at the ease with which a large crop was produced, and at the shortness of the time required to bring things to maturity. But while thus encouraged by the condition of affairs at Isabella, the Admiral received a message from Pedro Margarite to the effect that the Indians had changed in their behavior, and were threatening the safety of St. Thomas. Caonabo, it was said, was assembling his warriors, and preparing for an attack. This, however, did not occasion any special uneasiness in the mind of Columbus; he contented himself with sending Margarite a reinforcement of twenty men; believing that the Indians could be readily repulsed with the increased force, guns and horses adding to the advantages possessed by the white men.

A greater source of anxiety was the condition of the colony. Very many

of the men were suffering from something like malaria, the effect of living in such heat and humidity, surrounded by undrained marshes and extensive forests. Their stock of medicines was exhausted; and, to add to the general discontent, flour began to get scarce. Grain they had in plenty; for wheat sown in January had ripened at the end of March; but their only contrivance for grinding it was a hand-mill; a process too slow and laborious when so large a quantity was required, and so few workmen to prepare it.

The Admiral decided that a mill and some other works important for the welfare of the community must be erected at once. But many of the workmen were sick, and it appeared that it would be a long time before these buildings could be completed. In this emergency, since the gentlemen of the colony required food as much as the laborers, the ruler directed that each one, no matter what his rank, should share in the work for the common good. This was considered a cruel degradation by the proud young Spanish nobles, and they tried by every means to escape it. But discipline was strict, and Columbus was the supreme authority in the island; they were obliged to obey.

In order to prevent the evils which arise from lack of occupation, Columbus determined, as soon as the pressing difficulty about food was settled, to send all the available force on an exploring expedition into the interior. Every healthy person, not absolutely necessary for the care of the sick, was accordingly put under arms; they numbered nearly four hundred, including the officers; and under the command of Ojeda, set out for St. Thomas. Here Ojeda was to remain in command of the post, while Margarite was to conduct the main body of the troops on a military tour, for the thorough exploration first of Cibao, and then of the other parts of the island.

Written instructions were sent to Margarite, to treat the Indians kindly and justly, but to deal rigorously with any who were detected in theft; all required supplies were to be purchased, not taken by force. A strict discipline was to be maintained among his men, and they were not to be suffered to wander from the main body.

It was the intention of Columbus to make another voyage of discovery in the bays and channels to the west of their present situation. For this purpose he would need no more than the force required to man the vessels which he intended to take. Having made arrangements for the government of the colony during his absence, by appointing a junta of which his brother Don Diego was president, he set out upon this voyage.

The two largest ships were left at Isabella, as being unfit for purposes of exploration; the others, of light draught, and therefore able to penetrate where the others could not go, were chosen for the purpose. He intended to visit Cuba, reaching it at about the point where he had discontinued his explorations on his first voyage, and following its coast-line until he should

reach—if it were indeed the extremity of the continent of Asia—the wealthy and populous lands described by Polo and Mandeville.

Had he kept to this intention, he would of course have found that Cuba was an island; but he was attracted by the appearance of Jamaica, and sailed toward that body of land, being assured by the Cubans that gold was to be found there. He reached the western extremity of the island, when the wind changed, and became unfavorable for further advance. He accordingly returned to Cuba, where he endeavored to learn from the people something of its extent. Several caciques assured him that it was endless; an assertion which he was quite willing to believe. At last, one of them told him that he could learn more from the inhabitants of a country to the west, called Mangon. The word was welcome to his ears; for was it not the same as Mangi, the name of the richest province of Cathay? To add to the certainty, this cacique informed him that the people of Mangon had tails like those of animals; and wore long garments to conceal the deformity. He at once recalled a story told by Sir John Mandeville, of a people of the far east who could imagine no reason for their neighbors' wearing clothes, unless they had something of the kind to hide; and who accordingly circulated the report that these neighbors had tails. As for the garments, it was a well-known fact that the subjects of the great Khan wore long flowing robes of richest texture.

But they found themselves involved in narrow and shallow channels, almost choked with sand, where they found it impossible to proceed until they saw that they could not get out any other way. Their vessels had received considerable injury, having run aground often, and had to be helped along by the use of the capstan. Their cables and rigging were worn, their provisions scanty and becoming unfit for use, and the crews worn out by incessant labor. Still they had not found any sign of a civilized people; and they demanded that the vessels should be turned toward Isabella. It was certain, they said, that this vast body of land could not be an island; for they had already coasted three hundred and thirty-five leagues, and yet saw no sign of any end to the land. Columbus, anxious to prove that this was the view of all on board, sent a notary around to every person on board the vessels, from the master to the cabin-boy, to ask each if he had any doubt that this land was not an island; if he had the slightest, he was at once to declare it, and the reasons for it, that the matter might be investigated at once, and forever set at rest. Each one declared, under oath, that he believed this to be a part of the mainland of Asia. Many experienced navigators, and others well versed in the geographical knowledge of the day, were on board, and this opinion was on their part, the result of careful study of their charts, and mature deliberation.

Yet at the very time that these affidavits were made, they were almost within sight of the group of islands to the south; beyond which, after an hour's

sail, they might have seen the open sea. Two or three days' advance would have proved to Columbus that this belief that Cuba was a part of the mainland was a mistake; but this proof was never given him; he died in the belief that this was the extremity of the Asiatic continent.

Losing sight of the eastern extremity of Jamaica August 19, they sailed toward Hispaniola. But on the way thither, Columbus was seized with a strange sickness. The hardships and privations which he had shared with his men, joined to the anxieties and responsibilities which were his alone, had proved too much for his years; for he was now past sixty, and his life had been so full of cares and adventures and hardships that his years pressed heavily upon him. While his vessels were struggling to make their way through perilous and unknown channels, he was ever on the alert; for their safety depended on his watchfulness. While there was still an immediate prospect of reaching the territories of the Khan, excitement kept him up. But when this hope was abandoned for the present, and the caravels rode in a calm and well-known sea, he gave way, and sank into a deep slumber which closely resembled death.

His frightened crew hastened toward Isabella, followed by the two other caravels, arriving there Sept. 4. The unconscious Admiral was conveyed on shore to his residence, and the utmost available skill exercised to effect a cure.

When he became conscious of his surroundings, what was his surprise to find his brother Bartholomew at his bedside! This was the brother who had undertaken to lay before Henry VII. of England, the great project of a western route to India. Captured and plundered by a corsair, he was delayed in reaching his destination for several years. Arrived at London, he submitted the question to the King, who acted more readily than Ferdinand and Isabella. Bartholomew was bidden to return to Spain, to bring his brother to England, that final arrangements might be made. On reaching Paris, he learned, for the first time, that the tardy Spanish sovereigns had provided the armament for which his brother had asked, the great discovery had been made, and the two vessels had returned in safety.

The Admiral was the darling of fortune at the Spanish court; and his brother felt his reflected glory even in Paris, distant as it then was from Madrid and Barcelona; for the distance between the two places is to be reckoned, not by miles, but by the time required to reach one from the other. But although the brother of the greatest man then living, he was short of money. This, however, was easily remedied; and no less a personage than the King of France furnished money to defray the expenses of his journey from Paris to Seville.

He reached Seville just as the Admiral had departed on his second voyage. Repairing at once to the court, he was well received; and Ferdinand and Isa-

Isabella, understanding that he was an able and experienced navigator, gave him three vessels, freighted with supplies for the infant colony, and sent him to his brother's aid. Again he arrived just too late; reaching Isabella a few days after the expedition for the exploration of Cuba had sailed.



BARTHOLOMEW COLUMBUS.

Columbus now had his two brothers at his side. "I have never had any better friend," he wrote to his sons, "on my right hand and on my left hand, than my brothers." Diego was of a gentle and retiring disposition, scarcely fitted for the command of men; but Bartholomew more closely resembled his brother Christopher.

The Admiral accordingly determined to relieve himself, during his present ill-health, of the cares of state; and appointed his brother Bartholomew Adelantado, or lieutenant-governor. This appointment was much resented by

the sovereigns, when they heard of it; as they considered that officers of such high rank ought to be appointed by them only. This was one instance in which the star of Columbus began to wane; henceforward, we find many such cases, until it sets at last, in obscurity, disgrace, and death.

We have seen the departure of Pedro Margarite from St. Thomas, with his little army of about four hundred men. He disregarded the instructions of Columbus almost from the start; and succeeded in making enemies of the gentle and peaceable natives. He was reprov'd by Diego Columbus and his council; but disregarded the reproof, refusing to acknowledge their authority. He found a willing lieutenant in his defiance in Friar Boyle, or Buil, as the name is sometimes written; who was the head of the religious fraternity, a member of the council, and apostolical vicar of the New World. It is not easy to find why this priest should have been so determined an enemy of Columbus; but throughout the history of the colony he had thrown difficulties in the way of the Admiral, and now joined himself with the rebel Margarite.

They decided to return to Spain; and seizing upon the vessels which had brought out Bartholomew Columbus, they set sail, accompanied by those who were discontented with their residence in the colony and displeased with the rule of Columbus. The departure of Margarite left the army without a head; and the soldiers scattered in small bands over the country, indulging in all kinds of excesses. The Indians had become changed, by the treatment received at the hands of the Spaniards, into vindictive enemies; and whenever they met small parties of soldiers, attacked and slew them. Success made them bolder; and Guarionex, one of the caciques, put to death ten Spaniards who had quartered themselves in his town, and followed up the massacre by setting fire to a house in which forty-six of their countrymen were lodged. He then threatened to attack a small fortress which had been built in his neighborhood; and the garrison was obliged, through fear of him, to remain shut up until reinforcements could reach them.

A more formidable enemy still was Caonabo, who had been enraged by the erection of the fortress St. Thomas within the very center of his dominions. He assembled an army of ten thousand warriors, and stole through the forest, hoping to find the fortress but slightly guarded. But Ojeda was not the soldier to be destroyed because he felt too secure; his forces were drawn up within the stronghold, and Caonabo saw that an attack by his naked warriors would be hopeless.

Still he did not despair; but surrounding the fort, and shutting up every path through the forest by which relief might come, proceeded to reduce it by famine. The siege lasted for thirty days, and the garrison was reduced to great distress. It was now that Ojeda showed a nobler courage than even his daring feats during the Moorish wars had indicated; constantly leading his men wherever opportunity offered for a successful sally, he wrought great

havoc in the ranks of the enemy, and finally wore out the patience of the savages. The siege was raised and Caonabo retired.

But the cacique did not despair of reducing the white power in the island: he formed the design of securing the assistance of the other caciques—there were five principal rulers in Hispaniola—and making a concerted attack upon Isabella, the weakness of which was well known to him. But this design proved impracticable by reason of Guacanagari's fidelity to the Spaniards. His territories lay nearest the town; and without his assistance, or at least connivance, they could not hope to accomplish their end. The angry savages made several attacks upon him, hoping to force him to yield; and inflicted various injuries upon him and his people; but he remained firm in what he considered his duty to the strangers; and for a while the Spaniards were safer than, as a whole, they deserved to be.

Columbus, although still unable to leave his bed, was obliged to take active measures to undo the mischief that had been done during his absence. He received a visit from Guacanagari, and cemented a friendship with the faithful Indian. He took measures to punish the tributary cacique who had massacred the Spaniards at Fort Magdalena, managing at the same time to avoid war with his superior chief, Guarionex; and to establish a fort in the very midst of his territories.

But the most formidable enemy of all was Caonabo, who was yet untouched by any negotiation. Ojeda requested the privilege of trying to capture him, and Columbus readily assented.

The cavalier chose ten followers, of whose courage he was well assured; and set out for the territory of the cacique. Approaching him with much deference, he represented himself as an envoy from the Grand Cacique of the Spaniards, sent to treat with the great Chief Caonabo on equal terms. The savage, greatly flattered at the idea, received him kindly and entertained him handsomely. There was no one whom Columbus could have sent who would have been received with more respect; for Caonabo had tried Ojeda's skill and courage as a warrior, and looked up to him accordingly.

The cavalier's skill in all the manly exercises practiced by the knights of that day excited still further the admiration of the cacique; and what was apparently a warm friendship sprang up between them. But one was wily as the other; the cavalier was waiting to entrap the chief: and the chief was determined to outwit the cavalier.

At last, Ojeda broached the subject of a treaty between his host and the Spaniards, and begged the cacique to go to Isabella to conclude one with Columbus. The chief hesitated; one inducement after another was offered; and finally Ojeda promised him the bell of the chapel. This bell was regarded by the Indians as possessed of magical powers; they had seen the Spaniards hurrying to mass at the sound of it, and were accustomed to say that it could

talk. They called it *turey*, a word which they frequently applied to the belongings of the strangers, and which really meant in their language, heavenly. The idea of possessing the *turey* talking bell was too much for Caonabo's persistence; he agreed to go to Isabella and make a treaty of peace with Columbus.

Ojeda congratulated himself upon his success; and anxiously awaited the day set by the cacique for their departure. It came, and with it Caonabo, attended by an armed force of fully five thousand warriors. Aghast at this display of power, Ojeda demanded to know why he took such a force with him upon a mere friendly visit; Caonabo replied that it did not become a great cacique like himself to travel without many attendants. Ojeda professed himself satisfied, although he feared that it was the intention of Caonabo to surprise the fortress, or make some attempt on the person of Columbus, and Ojeda was well aware of what would become of the colony without the Admiral at the head of its affairs.

As they journeyed onward, he revolved in his mind various schemes to obtain possession of the person of Caonabo without exciting the suspicions of his men. At last he hit upon one. Having halted one day near the Little Yagui, the cavalier produced a pair of brightly burnished steel handcuffs, and displayed them to the wondering chief. In reply to his question as to their purpose, Ojeda gravely informed him that they were a kind of bracelet worn, on state occasions, by the Spanish King; and that these had been sent as a present to the great cacique Caonabo. He proposed that the chief should go to the river and bathe, after which he should be invested with these bracelets, and set upon Ojeda's horse, so as to astonish his people by assuming the state of a Spanish monarch. Caonabo was quite ready to assent; pleased as a child at the idea of mounting the horse, he was by no means disappointed when Ojeda explained that of course he would himself ride in front, and guide the animal; for the bravest of the Indians were still somewhat afraid of the strange beasts.

The program was carried out, as Ojeda had planned it. Caonabo repaired to the river and bathed—probably the fastidious cavalier had good reason to insist on this preliminary—was assisted to mount behind Ojeda, and the gyves were adjusted on his wrists, and closed with a snap. Proudly he sat, as they rode into the presence of his assembled men; and proudly he called their attention to the *turey* bracelets of shining white metal, unlike any that they possessed. The Indians gazed admiringly, while Ojeda, telling Caonabo that the Spanish monarchs were accustomed to ride in circles about their subjects, gave reign to his horse, and rode about the Indians. So absorbed were they in watching the new grandeur of their chief that they did not notice how Ojeda's men had withdrawn from their midst, and had in fact quite disappeared. Wider and wider grew the circles, until they carried the riders quite

out of sight. Suddenly, Caonabo saw himself surrounded by Ojeda's men, and was told that death would be the result if he made any outcry. His own followers were out of sight and hearing; and, a helpless prisoner in the hands of the Spaniards, he was taken to Isabella.

Curiously enough, this exploit did not diminish the liking or respect which Caonabo entertained for Ojeda; it rather increased his respect, since the cavalier had daring and cunning enough to carry off a chief from the midst of his warriors, without provoking a battle. He manifested much more reverence for his captor than for the Admiral, saying disdainfully that Columbus had never dared come to his home personally and seize him.

The great enemy of disorder being thus helpless, and only awaiting the departure of a vessel to be sent to Spain for trial, Columbus was at full liberty to attend to other needs of his colony. Much of the existing distress was allayed by the arrival of four ships; which brought not only the necessary supplies, but also a physician and an apothecary, and workmen of various trades.

The letters received by this fleet were of the most gratifying kind; expressing, as they did, the royal approval of all that Columbus had done; and informing him that arrangements would be made to dispatch a caravel each month from Spain, and directing that one should sail from Isabella at the same interval. A letter addressed to the colonists collectively bade them obey Columbus implicitly, threatening punishment for each offense against the regulations he might enact.

Eager to send home such evidences of the wealth of the country as he could, Columbus collected all the gold possible, and with specimens of other metals, various fruits, and valuable plants, he freighted the vessels. But these innocent articles of commerce were not all. Five hundred Indian captives were sent to be sold as slaves in Seville.

The capture of Caonabo had not put an end to the Indian league, as the Spaniards had hoped. The leadership was taken up by the brother of the cacique, Manicaotex, and by the neighboring cacique Behecio, whose sister, Anacaona, was the favorite wife of Caonabo. Columbus learned that the Indian force was assembled in the Vega, but two days' journey from Isabella; and that they intended marching upon the settlement, and overwhelming it by pure force of numbers. He hastily assembled his little army—two hundred infantry, and a cavalry force of twenty, the latter under the leadership of Ojeda. His soldiers were armed with cross-bows, swords, lances, and the heavy arquebuses then in use; which were so unwieldy that they were usually provided with a rest, and sometimes were mounted on wheels. His men were cased in steel and covered by their great bucklers; and thus equipped, formed a force which could with safety attack twenty times their number of naked savages. They had another assistance in their fight—they were accompanied

by about twenty blood-hounds, which, at a word from their masters, would spring upon the enemy, drag them to the earth, and tear them to pieces.

March 27, 1495, Columbus issued from the gates of Isabella and proceeded toward the Vega with his little army. The Indians were hid in the forest which on all sides surrounded this beautiful open plain; but they sent their scouts to count the enemy. They had but little skill in arithmetic, and had no word in their language for a higher number than ten; they were accustomed, however, to give accurate reports of the force brought by an enemy, by allowing a grain of corn for each warrior, and displaying the number to the cacique. In the present case, it was a mere handful; and the Indians felt confident of victory.

By skillful maneuvering, Columbus managed to get his enemies all into one body, on a plain interspersed with clusters of forest trees, near the spot where the town of St. Jago now stands. By the advice of Don Bartholomew, he divided his force into several detachments, and advanced upon them from several directions at once.

The sudden clamor of the drums and trumpets alarmed the Indians; and almost at the same moment that these were heard, a destructive fire was poured from the groups of trees. It seemed that thunder and lightning had been brought down from heaven for their destruction; and upon the miserable frightened wretches poured a steady rain of arrows. The cavalry dashed in upon them, hacking and hewing as they rode them down; and the terrible blood-hounds were let loose, seizing the naked savages by the throat and dragging them to the earth, to be literally torn to pieces. Such was the warfare of a Christian nation at the end of the fifteenth century; at the end of the nineteenth, the process is simpler and more refined; a machine-gun is brought up, and volley after volley of shot poured upon the enemy; or a shell is sent shrieking through the air, to explode in the midst of the camp.

Well satisfied with the decisive victory thus obtained, Columbus returned to Isabella; and almost immediately set out upon a military tour of the island, to reduce the other inhabitants to subjection. All the caciques except Behecio were brought to sue for peace; and he retired with his sister, to the distant part of the island which was his by right.

Columbus had at first dreamed of ruling these people as their benefactor. The wrongs done them by his own followers had prevented the possibility of this; and he now must rule them as a conqueror. He accordingly demanded that they should pay him tribute. In the regions of the mines, each Indian above the age of fourteen was required to pay, every three months, a hawk's bell full of gold-dust—an amount equivalent, at the present day, to about fifteen dollars of United States money. Those who lived where gold was not obtainable, were required to furnish, instead, twenty-five pounds of cotton each, and at the same interval of time. Copper medals were struck, different

for each quarter of the year; and given as receipts to the Indians who had paid their tribute, to be worn suspended around their necks. The caciques were required to pay a much larger personal tribute, of course, than their subjects.



SPANIARDS SETTING DOGS ON INDIANS.

(From an Old Engraving.)

The fortresses already built were strengthened, and others were erected, in order to keep the Indians in subjection, and enforce the payment of this tribute. It was not paid without protest. Guarionex represented to Columbus that there were no mines in his district; that the only gold was in the grains washed down by the streams, which his people were not skilled in collecting. He offered, instead of this tribute, to cultivate a strip of ground from sea to sea, and pay the grain in place of the gold; but although, according to the calculation of a contemporary historian, this was enough, in one year, to have

fed the whole population of Castile for ten years, the proposition was rejected. Columbus, however, compromised with the cacique, agreeing to accept one-half the quantity which had been originally demanded.

A patient people may bear tyranny a long time; but there is a point beyond which patience not only ceases to be a virtue, but to be a possibility. The Indians had now reached that point; they could not pay the tribute which was demanded; and they resolved to rid themselves forever of the white men.

They had tried war, and found themselves beaten. They now resolved to starve the Spaniards out. But in making this effort, they seemed to forget that they too must suffer; and in fact they did suffer far more than the Spaniards did. Many thousands of them perished miserably, of hunger, or disease produced by privation, or exhaustion brought on by exertion under such conditions. The remnant of them crept back to their homes, submitting humbly to the harsh rule of the conquerors.

While these things were going on, Margarite and Friar Boyle had reached Spain, and laid their case before the court. They accused Columbus of deceiving his royal patrons regarding the wealth to be derived from the islands, which they declared would always be a source of expense rather than of profit; and they declared that he had treated his followers harshly and cruelly; laying especial stress upon the indignities which he had heaped upon the gentlemen of the colony. It was the signal for the sovereigns to withdraw their favor from Columbus; and gradually from this time forth, we find them holding him in less esteem. Fortunately for him, however, the representations of Margarite and his reverend accomplice had hardly reached the royal ear when the ships commanded by Torres arrived in Spain, bringing information that Columbus had returned from his voyage of discovery to Isabella, and was fully assured that Cuba was a part of the mainland of Asia. The effect was immediately apparent; instead of leaving the appointment of a commissioner to investigate affairs in Hispaniola to Fonseca, almost an open enemy of Columbus, the King and Queen took the matter in hand themselves, and appointed Juan Aguado. He had accompanied Columbus to Hispaniola, and on his return to Spain had been strongly recommended to royal favor by the Admiral. It was generally thought, then, that Ferdinand and Isabella had acted directly in the interests of Columbus by appointing this man to inspect the affairs of the colony.

As to the Indian prisoners who were sent to be sold as slaves, the Queen did not altogether approve of the idea. A royal order had been issued permitting the sale; but within five days thereafter it was suspended, until the sovereigns could inquire into the matter, and learn from wise and pious theologians whether they might with a clear conscience allow the sale to go on. The priests differed much upon the subject; and the Queen finally decided it

for herself. She ordered that the Indians should be sent back to Hispaniola, and that only the gentlest means should be used in the effort to convert them to Christianity. Thus amid the temptations of a queen-regnant's position did Isabella of Castile keep her faith unspotted from the world, and decide a vexed question in accordance with the true teachings of the religion which she professed.

Aguado arrived at Isabella while Columbus was still absent on his tour through the island. His arrival was the signal for disorder of all kinds; for he gave out that he was come to right every wrong that had been done by the Admiral. The report was circulated that the downfall of Columbus and his family was at hand; Aguado refused to acknowledge the authority of the Adelantado; and a report was actually circulated through the island that a new Admiral had arrived; and that the old one was to be put to death.

Undoubtedly there were evils existing in the colony; some of them were brought about by the officials, some by the colonists; some of them had arisen without much fault on either side. But whether it was the misdeeds of the colonists, the neglect of the orders of Columbus by the minor officials, or any other cause which produced them, the ungrateful Aguado, "dressed in a little brief authority," displayed his weakness of head and heart by blaming all upon Columbus. Nor was this all; he interfered in the government; ordered the arrest of some persons; called to account the officers appointed by the Admiral; and refused to respect any of his regulations. He finally insinuated that the prolonged absence of Columbus was due to fear of the royal commissioner's investigation.

Columbus returned, having heard of the arrival of Aguado and of his behavior. Much to Aguado's disappointment, he behaved with grave and punctilious courtesy; and ordered the letter of credence which the envoy had brought to be publicly proclaimed the second time, that all might hear the will of the sovereigns. Aguado had hoped that he would indulge in violent language, which might be construed as disrespectful to the royal authority; but Columbus was too wary for this.

Everywhere, however, Columbus was looked upon as the setting, and Aguado as the rising sun. Even the Indians, hoping something from a change of masters, brought their complaints against the Admiral, as the author of all the wrongs that they had suffered. Aguado considered that he had collected enough testimony to ruin his benefactor, and prepared to return to Spain, to lay it all before Ferdinand and Isabella.

Columbus resolved to return, also; knowing that he had no friends at court, but many enemies. But just as they were ready to depart, a terrible hurricane, such as the Spaniards had never before seen or heard of, and more destructive than any that the Indians had ever witnessed, swept over the island. The four caravels of Aguado were completely destroyed; also two



AN ABORIGINAL RACE WORKING IN MINES.

others, which were in the harbor with them. The *Nina* was the only vessel that survived the storm; and it would have been foolhardy to attempt the voyage in her alone. Columbus at once gave orders that new vessels should be constructed from the fragments of those destroyed.

During the delay thus occasioned, welcome tidings reached the settlement: mines of great importance had at last been discovered. The discovery was brought about by singular and romantic means. A young Spaniard, Miguel Diaz, had wounded a comrade in a quarrel, and fearing the punishment which would be meted out to him by the Adelantado, he fled into the wilderness. He was accompanied by five or six comrades, who, like himself, had "left their country [or colony] for their country's good." Kindly received by the Indians who were settled near the mouth of the Ozema, governed by a female cacique, they remained there for some time. Diaz and the cacique loved each other, and she became his wife by the simple Indian ceremony. But he grew homesick for civilization; and she, fearing to lose him, resolved to devise some means of enticing the Spaniards to that part of the island. She told him of rich mines in the neighborhood, and urged him to invite them to leave the unhealthy situation of Isabella, and settle near the villages of her people. He caught at the suggestion; and finding upon investigation that the mines were indeed rich, he set off to Isabella, about fifty leagues away through the trackless forest. The guides with which his wife had furnished him, however, found their way; and he brought the welcome tidings to the Admiral, just at the time when such news was more welcome than ever it would have been before this time of trial.

Assured that the wounded man had recovered, that no punishment awaited him, and that he had rendered a great service to the Admiral, as well as to his sovereigns, it was with a light heart that young Diaz set out on the homeward journey, as the guides of the Adelantado.

Bartholomew Columbus returned with a most favorable report, and valuable specimens of gold which had been found with little difficulty. He reported also that there was some evidence that the mines had been regularly worked in some former time, though the Indians now contented themselves with such gold as could be separated from the sands of the river by the simplest process of washing. With his usual splendor of imagination, Columbus at once jumped to the conclusion that these were the ancient mines of Ophir, whence King Solomon had derived the vast amount of gold used in the temple.

But whoever had worked the mines in the past, the fact that they had been discovered in the present was enough to gild all the dreams of Columbus, and to make him sure of a more favorable reception at court than he might otherwise have been granted. As soon as the second caravel was completed, they made ready to depart; Columbus in one, Aguado in the other; and March 10, 1496, they set sail from Isabella for Spain.

CHAPTER V.

THE LAST VOYAGES OF COLUMBUS.

Arrival at Cadiz—Reception at Court—"Gold in Bars"—A Thoughtful Queen—Third Voyage of Columbus—Departure from Spain—La Trinidad—The Continent Discovered—The Land of Pearls—The Earthly Paradise—Building of San Domingo—Conspiracy of Indians—Roldan's Rebellion—Dangers of the Government—Indian Insurrection—Guarionex Captured—Roldan's Luck—Terms Made with the Rebels—Bobadilla in Hispaniola—His Course—Uncertainty of Columbus—Return to San Domingo—Columbus in Chains—His Brothers Arrested—The "Reward of Services"—Embarkation of Columbus—Arrival in Spain—Ferdinand's Jealousy and Distrust—Ovando Appointed Governor—Wrongs of the Indians—A Great Fleet—Columbus Plans a Crusade—Ferdinand's Substitute—Fourth Voyage of Columbus—Sails from Spain—Ovando Refuses Shelter—His Ship—The Predicted Storm—Results—Cruising—Adventures on Land—A Daring Messenger—Reaches Jamaica—Courage of Mendez—Anxiety of the Castaways—Mutiny of Porras—Columbus Predicts an Eclipse—Terror of the Natives—An Insolent Messenger—The Mutiny Ended—Assistance Arrives—Columbus Reaches Spain—Death of Isabella—Illness of Columbus—Assistance of Vespucci—Ferdinand's Delay—A Compromise Proposed—Rejection—A Last Glean of Hope—Death of Columbus—His Burial—Ceremonies Attending the Removal to Havana.

THE two vessels had expected to purchase food from the natives of the neighboring islands; but in this they were disappointed. In consequence there was nearly a famine on board before the end of the voyage was reached; and the firmness and determination of Columbus alone saved the half-starved sailors from killing and eating the Indian prisoners, among whom was Caonabo.

After many delays, they arrived at Cadiz June 11. Columbus found in the harbor three caravels ready to sail with supplies for the colony; and the letters which were to have been delivered to him at Isabella were put into his hands at Cadiz. Sending careful instructions to his subordinates in accordance with the wishes of the sovereigns, as here expressed, he proceeded to notify the King and Queen formally of his arrival.

Their reply reached him July 12; it congratulated him on his safe return, and invited him to repair to court when he should have recovered from the fatigues of his journey. The tenor of this letter was a surprise to Columbus, who had expected, after the behavior of Aguado, to find that he was in deep disgrace at court. Surprised and delighted to find that Ferdinand and Isabella retained their appreciation of the services which he had rendered, and were apparently not influenced by the efforts of his slanderous enemies, Columbus proposed to them a new enterprise.

But Ferdinand was then engaged in extensive military operations, the ob-



COLLMERS PROTECTING THE INDIAN PRISONERS.

ject of which was to add to his dominions the kingdom of Naples; he was also busily arranging such marriages for his children as would be likely to extend his empire. Both enterprises took time and money; and it was only after considerable delay that Columbus obtained a grant of six millions of maravedis—equivalent, in present value, to about fifty-four thousand dollars in United States money—to fit out the squadron which he had requested.

But money granted is not money secured. Just as "the law's delay" seemed to be over, and Columbus was definitely promised this sum from the royal treasury, Pedro Nino, a captain of the fleet with which Columbus had sailed to Hispaniola, arrived at Cadiz with three caravels, freighted, he said, with gold in bars. Instead of making a formal report as soon as he landed, he went straight to his home in Huelva, to visit his family.

The report of the "gold in bars" raised the wildest expectations, not only in the people, but in Columbus and the sovereigns. To the King, especially, the news was welcome; and he appropriated, for the purpose of repairing a fortress, the sum which had been granted to Columbus, arranging that the Admiral should draw the equivalent amount from the cargo of Nino's vessels.

Meanwhile, all were upon the tiptoe of expectation, to see the first great amount of treasure which had been brought from the New World. Columbus readily understood whence it had come; the newly discovered mines of Hayna, the ancient Ophir, were beginning to yield up their vast stores of yellow metal; and since this came so soon after their opening, it was evident that the quantity of gold there to be found was something wonderful, incalculable.

Nino returned to his vessels; and then the truth was made known. He was a miserable maker of jokes; the "gold in bars," the rumor of which had created such excitement, was represented by the Indians whom he had brought, and who were expected, when sold as slaves, to furnish gold in considerable quantities.

The ready money which was to furnish the ships had been spent on the frontier fortress, and there was nothing for Columbus to do but to wait until another grant had been made. The King had never been as favorably disposed toward the enterprise as the Queen had shown herself; and his mind was now more readily poisoned against Columbus. He did not see any proofs of the great wealth which the Admiral had promised, and he scarcely believed that there was any foundation for these golden expectations. Isabella, however, seems to have been actuated by different motives; less narrow-minded than Ferdinand, she saw that, whether the colony continued to be a source of expense or not, much was ultimately to be gained by supporting it, and by furnishing Columbus with the means to prosecute his plans. But the Queen's resources were limited; the treasury of Castile had furnished a marriage-portion to the Princess Juana, and had liberally endowed Prince Juan, the

heir to the throne, when he married an Austrian princess in the spring of 1497. The Princess Isabella was now betrothed to the young King of Portugal, the successor of King John; and a marriage-portion must be found for her.

Still, the Queen considered carefully the question of how these vessels were to be furnished; until her attention was distracted from state affairs by the death of her son, a few months after his marriage. Even in her grief, she was not unmindful of Columbus; his two sons had been pages in the household of the prince; she now ordered that they should hold a similar office in her own.



"GOLD IN BARS."

There was no danger then, that Isabella would forget the great discoverer and the services which he had rendered. The difficulty was, as we have seen, for her to find the money; and she at last actually took it from that which had been set aside as the marriage portion of the Infanta Isabella.

This was finally arranged in the spring of 1498; and on May 30 of that year, Columbus sailed with his squadron of six vessels on his third voyage of discovery. He proposed now to take a different route from that which he had before pursued, sailing much farther south; for he believed that under

the equator he should find much rarer and richer productions than anywhere else; and this belief was supported by the opinion of Jayne Ferrer, an eminent and learned lapidary, who had traveled much, especially in Asia, and was well versed, as the learning of the time went, in geography and natural history.

For two months after they sailed from Spain, they did not reach the western land. Part of the time they were becalmed in the midst of such intense heat that the tar melted from the ships, and the seams opened, causing much leakage. Their meat had spoiled; the wheat was parched as if by fire; and there was not more than a single cask of water in each vessel. Columbus had vowed that if he were permitted to find the land which he expected, he would name it in honor of the Trinity; what was his surprise, then, when the lookout, about noon on the last day of the year, declared that he saw three mountains rising out of the water. The ships drew nearer, and it was seen that the mountains were united at the base. With pious exultation, Columbus bestowed upon it the name which it still bears—La Trinidad.

The ships cast anchor and obtained a supply of water. While coasting along this island, Columbus observed, to the south, low-lying land, stretching more than twenty leagues. He named it La Isla Santa, supposing it, like the other land that he had discovered, to be an island. It was in fact that portion of South America which is intersected by the mouth of the Orinoco. Thus he felt assured that Cuba was a part of the main land, and named a portion of a continent as an island.

Casting anchor on August 2, near the southern point of Trinidad, they saw approaching them a large canoe, containing about twenty-five young Indian warriors. Thinking to attract them by music and dancing, when gestures of friendship and offers of trinkets had failed to do so, Columbus ordered that some of the musicians whom he had brought should play, while one man performed a dance on the deck of his vessel. But the Indians mistook this demonstration for a war-dance, and let a shower of arrows fly at the dancer and his comrades. This was answered by a discharge of a couple of cross-bows from the ship, and the entertainment being concluded, the spectators paddled rapidly away.

The whites had some difficulty in communicating with the natives, for the latter generally fled as soon as they saw the strangers approaching; but at last, about a week after they first saw land, they succeeded in doing so. The Indians readily told them that gold was to be obtained on a highland to the west, but added that the people living there were cannibals, and the road was infested by venomous animals. The attention of the Spaniards, however, was arrested by the sight of the great numbers of pearls which the Indians wore as ornaments; and which, they learned, came from the coast of La Isla Santa.

Columbus found that in his own ship, which was a vessel of one hundred tons' burden, and required three fathoms of water, he could not sail freely among the islands, as he still considered the land which he had just discovered. "Late at night," he writes, "being on board of my ship, I heard as it were a terrible roaring, and as I tried to pierce the darkness I beheld the sea to the south heaped up into a great hill, the height of the ship, rolling slowly towards us. The ships were lifted up and whirled along so that I feared we should be engulfed in the commotion of the waters: but fortunately the mountainous surge passed on towards the entrance of the strait, and after a



THE LANDING OF COLUMBUS AT TRINIDAD.

contest with the counter-current gradually subsided." He sent a caravel to see where there was a channel between these islands by which he might reach the ocean beyond. The caravel ascended the Paria River for some distance, and returning, reported the discovery of a circular basin, but informed him that all the land which he had seen was connected. Still he does not seem to have realized that this was a continent; according to the best maps of Asia obtainable, it ought to be an island; and an island he was determined to consider it.

But there was danger that the supplies for the colony which the vessels had on board would spoil in this tropical climate; and the sea stores of the ships.

besides, were almost exhausted. In addition to this, Columbus suffered much from the gout, and was afflicted with an affection of the eyes, which rendered him nearly blind. He accordingly decided to sail for Hispaniola, and rest and



THE TIDAL WAVE.

recruit his health there; and to send his brother the Adelantado—upon whom that title had now been formally conferred by the sovereigns—to complete the exploration of this new group of islands. Several large and valuable

pearls had been secured, to send to the sovereigns as indisputable proof of the wealth that had now been discovered; and many smaller ones were obtained in exchange for hawks' bells and similar valuable articles of European manufacture.

Prevented by his infirmities from taking any part in the navigation of his vessels, Columbus had ample time to reflect upon the nature of the country whence they had just sailed. He remembered that the channels, as he had thought them, were fresh water, but slightly affected by the saltness of the sea; there was a current perceptible; and finally he came to the conclusions that these channels were in reality rivers. Streams of such size must drain a country of considerable extent, larger than any island. The land surrounding the Gulf of Paria must be a portion of an almost boundless continent, as yet unknown and uncivilized, and therefore clearly the property of its discoverer's patrons, the rulers of Spain.

Columbus went farther in his meditations, and decided that he had made yet another discovery. It was now generally received that the earth was spherical in form; but the various experiences through which he had recently passed, led him to believe it was really more the shape of a pear, one part much more elevated than the rest, and rising decidedly nearer the skies. He supposed this part to be under the Equator, in the interior of the continent which he had just discovered; and he concluded that this was the true earthly paradise; that the northern part of South America, to translate his speculations into language more intelligible to the latter part of the nineteenth century, was just outside the gates of heaven.

Immediately after the departure of Christopher Columbus for Spain his brother Bartholomew had begun work to develop the mines whose existence had been revealed by Miguel Diaz. The first step was to build a fortress near by, to which he gave the name of San Christoval, but which was popularly called the Golden Tower.

He was in the midst of difficulties caused by shortness of supplies of food, when the caravels which were ready to sail when Columbus arrived at Cadiz reached the island. They brought reinforcements of men; but many of the stores had spoiled on the voyage. Letters from the Admiral, brought by these vessels, directed the Adelantado to build a town near the mouth of the Ozema, for the purpose of being near the new mines.

The site was chosen, and the proposed city christened San Domingo, it being the germ of the present city, and having given name to the greater part of the island. The fortress was completed, and a garrison of twenty men placed in it; then the Adelantado set out to visit Behechio, the cacique who had not yet acknowledged Spanish sovereignty.

Behechio received him at the head of a considerable army of naked warriors; but the Adelantado had adopted his brother's method, and traveled

in state, with a large escort, and a guard of honor of his cavalry. Behechio saw that it would be worse than useless, to provoke a battle; and explained the force of warriors by saying that he had been engaged in reducing some rebellious villages. For two days the Adelantado and his escort were entertained by the cacique; and then the real business of the visit was entered upon. Behechio was informed that he must pay tribute, as the other caciques did; it was in vain he urged that there was no gold in his dominions: the Adelantado demanded that the tribute should be paid in cotton, hemp, and cassava bread. The cacique thankfully accepted this provision; and thus the tribe was brought into subjection without striking a blow.

But there were many difficulties to be overcome at Isabella, and the Adelantado found that he must give considerable time to the settling of affairs there. These were of the usual nature, complaints that there was not enough food to be had, when the complainants would not exert themselves in any way to obtain a crop, and had so outraged the natives that these kindly and generous creatures would no longer furnish them with the fruits and flesh which they desired. While the Adelantado was busy here and at San Domingo, the garrison at Fort Conception was threatened by an Indian league.

By the exertions of two missionaries, the cacique Guarionex had been brought to profess the Christian faith. Scarcely had they succeeded in doing so, when an injury inflicted upon his favorite wife caused him to renounce indignantly the religion professed by one who was capable of committing such an outrage. The missionaries removed to the territories of another cacique; first erecting a small chapel for the use of one of their converts, and furnishing it with an altar, a crucifix, and other images.

Scarcely had they departed, when a number of Indians, it was said by the order of Guarionex, entered the chapel, defiled the altar, and breaking the images in pieces, buried them in a neighboring field. The act was reported to the Adelantado; he caused the arrest of the Indians, and ordered their trial for sacrilege.

Offenses against the Church were then punished by inhuman barbarities: all heresies and acts of sacrilege must be expiated at the stake. The Indians were duly tried and convicted, and burned alive. Guarionex was still further angered by this assumption of power within his dominions and the inhuman death of his subjects. He allowed himself to be drawn by the other caciques into a league against the Spaniards, their immediate object being to rise and massacre the garrison at Fort Conception.

Their purpose was by some means betrayed to the garrison, and a messenger was sent to implore aid from the Adelantado, who was then at San Domingo. He marched against the dusky enemy, attacked the various caciques at the same moment, by dividing his force: and captured Guarionex and his brother

chieftains. The two latter were put to death; but the Adelantado, knowing what provocation Guarionex had received, and finding that it was only with difficulty that the others had induced him to join the conspiracy, released him, and thus subdued him by unexpected clemency.

Scarcely had this been attended to, when the Adelantado was summoned to receive the tribute which had been collected by Behechio. There were such vast stores of cotton and cassava bread that he was obliged to send to Isabella for one of his newly built caravels to transport them; and this vessel was a source of great wonder to the Indian cacique and his people. His sister, particularly, the wife of Caonabo, who appears to have shared his authority since her return from her husband's dominions, was anxious to entertain the white men and make them all the gifts that she could command.

In the meantime, the men of the colony at Isabella were not living any more peaceably. Always dissatisfied, since they could not realize the golden dreams with which they started out, they found now a leader in Francisco Roldan, an *alcalde*, or justice of the city. This man had been raised by Columbus from poverty and obscurity; he had at first been employed as a servant; but had gradually been promoted to higher positions, until he reached at last this official eminence. He performed his duties in this position so well that, on his departure for Spain, Columbus made him *alcalde mayor*, or chief judge of the island.

It might be thought that such a man would have been inalienably attached to his benefactor, and to those whom that benefactor loved; but there are some base natures who think that, if those above them be pulled down, they themselves can rise higher. It was so with Roldan. He was deeply jealous of the authority of the two brothers of Columbus; and soon made a party among the idle, daring, and dissolute of the community.

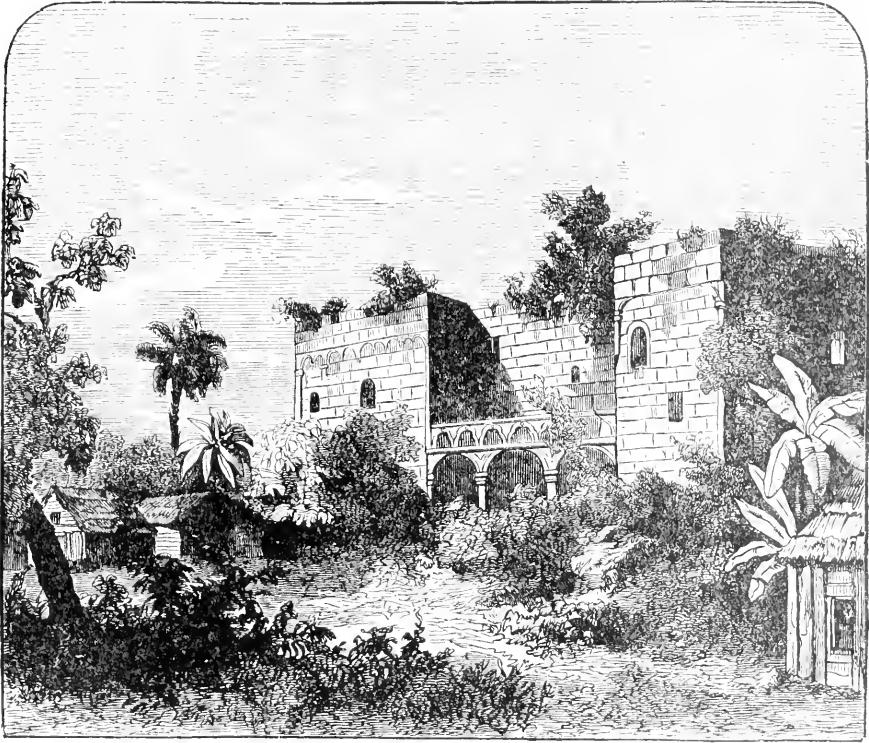
He began by sympathizing with the hard treatment which they had experienced; and having won them in this way, he suggested that their rulers were foreigners, intent only on enriching themselves. With no respect for the pride of a Spaniard, the two Genoese adventurers, left here by their equally selfish brother, treated the gentlemen of the community as mere slaves, compelling them to labor on the public works or to swell their state as they marched about the island, enriching themselves at the expense of the caciques.

By these means, he brought their feelings to such a height that they had, at one time, formed a conspiracy to assassinate the Adelantado; but the opportunity for which they waited did not occur, and the plan was consequently abandoned.

While Don Bartholomew was absent collecting the tribute of Behechio, the conspirators judged the time ripe for action. Roldan's plan was to excite a

tumult by underhand means, interpose in his official character, throw the blame upon the injustice and oppression of the two Columbuses, and seize upon the reins of power himself, in order to promote the peace and welfare of the island.

A pretext was soon found. When the caravel returned with her cargo of cassava and cotton, and was unloaded, she was drawn up on the beach. Roldan pointed out this circumstance, and told his followers that it was to prevent its being used by them to send word of their distress to Spain.



RUINS OF THE HOUSE OF COLUMBUS AT SAN DOMINGO.

The people now insisted that the caravel should be launched and sent to Spain, to ask for further supplies. Don Bartholomew pointed out to them that it was unfit for so long a voyage; it was rigged only for coasting trips about the island, and equipped for short voyages only. But they persisted. Roldan then advised them to rise against the tyranny of these would-be masters, to launch and take possession of the caravel, and dispatch her to Spain for the supplies so sorely needed, and at the same time to make complaints of the tyrants. He pointed out that if this vessel were in their hands, with its possibility of being the bearer of their complaints, even should they

not choose to send it, they might lead a life of ease and pleasure in the island, employing the natives as slaves, and sharing equally all that was gained by barter.

Don Diego, who was in command at Isabella at this time, his brother being absent, feared to come to any open rupture with the alcalde, and sent him, with forty men, to the Vega, on the pretext that there were certain Indians there who needed to be taught respect for the Spanish arms. He hoped by thus employing the energies of the seditious upon lawful business, they might be brought to submit cheerfully to the rule of his brother and himself.

But Roldan simply strengthened his own hands by making friends and partisans among the caciques who were dissatisfied with Spanish rule, and secured the devotion of his soldiers by indulging them in every possible way.

On his return, Don Bartholomew having returned also, he openly demanded that the caravel should be launched; but received the same reply that had been given to the demands of his followers. He was afraid to attempt any open rebellion at Isabella, but departed into the wilderness, hoping to overcome the garrisons one by one and attach them to his standard, when he would openly revolt against the rule of the Adelantado.

His movements threatened a siege of Fort Conception; and the commander, alarmed, sent for reinforcements. Don Bartholomew marched at the head of the relief, and held a parley with Roldan. The alcalde now boldly avowed that he was in the service of his sovereigns, defending their innocent subjects from injustice and oppression. The Adelantado demanded that he should submit himself to superior authority, or else surrender the office with which it had invested him. He refused to do either; and withdrew, with his forces, to the province of Xaragua, the realm of Behechio.

He suddenly marched to Isabella, intending to take possession of the caravel, and sail in it to the selected part of the island. Don Diego withdrew his forces into the fortress when he found that the enemy was too strong; but could do no more. Roldan found that he had not sufficient force to launch the caravel, or to assail the fortress; and dreading lest the Adelantado should return, and he be crushed between the soldiers of the two brothers, he proceeded to make preparations for the expedition to Xaragua. Pretending to act in his official capacity, for the relief of the oppressed subjects of the King and Queen, he broke open the royal storehouse and helped himself to the supplies of arms, ammunition and clothing there; and drove off such of the cattle as he judged necessary for his purpose; causing others to be killed for present use.

The Adelantado was unable to take any decisive step, for he knew that many of his men were disaffected; and he feared lest they should go over to the enemy. Another danger lay in the position of the Indians. They had been rendered hostile by the cruel treatment experienced from many of the Span-

iards, and the tribute exacted by the Admiral did not make them any less so; always watchful, they now saw that their enemies were divided among themselves; and only awaited the most favorable time to strike a deadly blow at the colony and its dependencies.

Such was the situation when news was received that two vessels were approaching the island. These were under the command of Pedro Fernandez Coronel, and brought a reinforcement of soldiers, and supplies of all kinds. It also brought the news that Don Bartholomew had been confirmed in his title and authority as Adelantado; and that the Admiral was in high favor at court, and would soon arrive with a powerful squadron.

Desirous of restoring the island to peace before the return of his brother, and feeling that his authority was not now likely to be disputed by any but the ringleaders among the rebels, Don Bartholomew proclaimed an amnesty for all past offenses, on condition of immediate return to allegiance. But Roldan knew too well of what he had been guilty; and despite these promises, feared to venture within the power of the Adelantado. He accordingly refused to hold any communication with those who were sent to receive his allegiance, and prevented his followers from speaking with them. He then immediately set out on his journey to Xaragua, not waiting to hear that the Adelantado had proclaimed him and his men traitors.

The Indian rising, which had been instigated by the idea that the whites were quarreling among themselves, now took place. The night of the full moon was fixed upon as the time that they were to attack the various parties of soldiers; but fortunately for the Spaniards, one of the caciques proved to be careless in his observations, and led his men against Fort Conception a night before the proper time. His attack was repulsed, and other garrisons prepared to receive the foe in time.

Guarionex, who had been a principal mover in this insurrection, now betook himself to the mountains, and made occasional sallies upon the villages of those who remained at peace with the Spaniards. The Adelantado resolved to put a stop to this, and resolutely marched against the cacique and those who had sheltered him. Both were captured; and were still in prison at San Domingo when the Admiral arrived in the island, after an absence of nearly two years and a half.

One of the first acts of Columbus was to issue a proclamation approving of the course pursued by his brother, and strongly condemning Roldan and his associates. But the rebel had been favored by an unexpected streak of good luck. Three of the caravels of the Admiral's squadrons had been carried by the current outside of the path pursued by their companions, and had reached the coast of Xaragua before they knew where they were. Roldan told their commanders nothing of his rebellion against the Adelantado; and being a man in an important official position, they did not hesitate to grant all his re-

quests for supplies. He thus procured many military stores; and his men cunningly circulated among those on board the vessels the story of the oppressions of the Adelantado, and of the various hardships endured by the colonists at Isabella and San Domingo, while they did not fail to enlarge upon the ease and plenty and pleasure of the life which they led in Xaragua. Many of those on board were convicts, who had been permitted to commute their sentence into exile to the New World; and they listened eagerly to the men who defied the law. Much mischief had been done in the three days before the captains of the ships discovered the real character of Roldan.

They then endeavored to dissuade him from the position that he had taken, and to induce him to return to the settlement and submit to the Admiral's authority; but their arguments were in vain. In the meantime, contrary winds rendered it impossible for them to proceed; and the captains, finding that there was danger of their crews becoming corrupted, resolved to send the artificers who were important, to the service of the colony overland, under the leadership of Juan Antonio Colombo, a relative of the Admiral's, and much devoted to him.

Forty of them were selected, and they set out; but scarcely had they landed, before thirty-two of them deserted to the enemy. Appeals, remonstrances, threats, promises, were all in vain; and Colombo returned to the ships with his eight faithful followers.

The ships stood out to sea, and finally made their way to their destination. Columbus was greatly troubled when he heard the report regarding the rebels in Xaragua; he resolved that steps must be taken at once to prevent their gaining any further headway; and with a view of getting away from the island all those who were discontented, and who might therefore be expected to join Roldan, he announced that five ships would sail for Spain at a given time, and that any one desirous of returning would be given free passage.

The ships sailed October 18, bearing letters from Columbus and from Roldan, giving both sides of the story in detail. Before they sailed, however, the commandant at Fort Conception had, at the desire of the Admiral, held a conference with Roldan, and again proffered him pardon. It was contemptuously refused, and demands of a highly insolent nature made. Again, after the departure of the ships, Columbus wrote to Roldan, offering him pardon if he would submit even then; and after much treating between the outraged authorities and the rebels, terms of capitulation were finally agreed upon; they were to be furnished with two ships, fully equipped for the voyage to Spain, within fifty days from the time that this agreement was reached; and Columbus made liberal concessions regarding their pay and privileges.

Obligated to give a certificate of good conduct to Roldan and his followers, Columbus felt that he had deceived his patrons; and wrote by a confidential person who was to sail in one of the vessels a letter to the sovereigns stating

the whole circumstance, and saying that he had been obliged to do this to save the island from utter confusion and ruin. Every day that Roldan remained in the island, whether in open rebellion or pretended submission, weakened the authority of Columbus among those under his command.

Insolent as the demands of Roldan had been, no sooner had they been granted than he resolved to make others. Not all of his men were to depart; but those who chose to remain were to receive certain lands for their maintenance. Further, it must be proclaimed that everything which had been charged against him and his party had been grounded upon false testimony, and the machinations of persons disaffected to the royal service. It was further provided that Roldan himself should be reinstated in his office.

Hard as these conditions were, and they were accompanied with the stipulation that if he failed to keep them, the rebels might compel him to do so, Columbus accepted them; only inserting a clause in the treaty that the commands of the sovereigns, of himself, and of the officers appointed by him, should be obeyed.

In the meantime, the reputation of Columbus was being constantly assailed by his enemies in Spain. He says of himself that he was "absent, envied, and a stranger." His son Ferdinand gives a vivid picture of the lengths to which the returned colonists went in accusing him to the authorities:—

"When I was at Granada, at the time the most serene Prince Don Miguel died, more than fifty of them, as men without shame, bought a great quantity of grapes, and sat themselves down in the court of the Alhambra, uttering loud cries, saying, that their Highnesses and the Admiral made them live in this poor fashion on account of the bad pay they received, with many other dishonest and unseemly things, which they kept repeating. Such was their effrontery that when the Catholic King came forth they all surrounded him, and got him into the midst of them, saying, 'Pay! Pay!' And if by chance I and my brother, who were pages to the most serene Queen, happened to pass where they were, they shouted to the very heavens, saying: 'Look at the sons of the Admiral of Mosquitoland, of that man who has discovered the lands of the deceit and disappointment, a place of sepulcher and wretchedness to Spanish hidalgos!' Adding many other insulting expressions, on which account we excused ourselves from passing by them."

When the King was thus compelled to listen to the complaints of these persons, is it not fair to suppose that privately his ears were filled with more decorous allegations against the Admiral? Such was the constant clamor against him, that Ferdinand and Isabella seriously considered the question of suspending him from the exercise of his high office; he had himself requested that some one might be sent out to administer justice in the colony courts; and they simply decided to send such a person, but to enlarge his authority by giving him civil as well as judicial functions.

But they certainly acted with deliberation. March 21, 1499, they directed Francis de Bobadilla to "ascertain what persons have raised themselves against justice in the island of Hispaniola, and to proceed against them according to law." Two months later, they conferred upon this officer the government of the island, and signed an order that all arms and fortresses in the Indies should be given up to him. But still Bobadilla was in Spain, and no news of this action had reached Columbus. Not until the first part of July was the supplanter permitted to sail; he arrived at Hispaniola August 23.

The Admiral was at Fort Conception when he arrived; but he at once took possession of his house at Isabella, and sent him the letter of the sovereigns. It read thus:—

"DON CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS, OUR Admiral of the Ocean:—

"We have commanded the Commendador Francis de Bobadilla, the bearer of this, that he speak to you on our part some things which he will tell you; we pray you give him faith and credence, and act accordingly.

"I the KING.

I the QUEEN.

"By their command,

"MIGUEL PEREZ DE ALMAZAN."

But Bobadilla did not wait for Columbus to appear before him. There had been a conspiracy to murder Columbus and Roldan, who had been active in the pursuit of some of his late companions and followers in rebellion; and Columbus, who saw that lenity was mistaken for weakness, resolved to take stern measures. Some of the offenders were executed; others were thrown, chained, into prison. Bobadilla at once demanded the release of these; and when Don Diego and his officers represented that these men were imprisoned by order of the Admiral, and could only be released by his order, the new envoy took matters into his own hands, and forced open the doors of their prison. He then seized all the property of Columbus, even his most private papers, and spoke publicly of him in the most disrespectful terms, saying that he was empowered to send him home in chains, and that neither he nor any of his family would ever be permitted to rule in Hispaniola again.

Columbus could not believe the reports that he heard; he would not believe that this man was really accredited by the sovereigns to whom he, Columbus had rendered such great services. It must surely be some adventurer, who had possessed himself of the fortress, and was usurping the government of the city.

When he learned the contents of the letter which Bobadilla bore, he did not know what to do; but of one thing he was sure, and that was, that the sovereigns had never intrusted him with such powers as he claimed; they had sent him out, in accordance with the Admiral's request, to perform the duties of a judge, and had armed him with provisional powers to make inquiries into the disturbance, of which Columbus himself had complained. Hethere-

fore wrote to Bobadilla, welcoming him to the island, and cautioning him against hastily granting licenses to collect gold. Bobadilla did not answer; and Columbus, hearing on all sides of the license which the newcomer practiced, published his belief that his own powers were granted to him in perpetuity, and that Bobadilla could not supersede him in the government. Then Bobadilla sent him the letter of credence, which we have copied above; and Columbus forced himself to yield to the usurper, and departed, almost alone, for San Domingo.



RIVETING THE FETTERS UPON COLUMBUS.

What authority had Bobadilla to act against the Admiral? It was contained in a letter of instructions from the sovereigns, which authorized him to "seize the persons and sequester the property of those who appeared to be culpable, and then to proceed against them and against the absent, with the highest civil and criminal penalties." This was clearly directed against Rodan and his followers, whom the King and Queen supposed to be still in rebellion; but as no names were mentioned, Bobadilla took advantage of its being so indefinite to make this language apply to the highest official of the New World.

Columbus arrived at San Domingo; and Bobadilla at once gave orders to arrest him, put him in irons, and confine him in the fortress. For a time, it

seemed that no one would obey this order, so shocked were even his enemies at the idea of offering such indignities to so old a man, who had rendered such services to their sovereigns, and who had been honored by them in every possible way. Finally, one of his own servants undertook the task of fettering the great Admiral; "a graceless and shameless cook," according to Las Casas, who was nearly a contemporary of Columbus, "who, with unwashed front, riveted the fetters with as much readiness and alacrity as though he were serving him with choice and savory viands. I knew the fellow, and I think his name was Espinosa."

What was the charge against him? "I make oath that I do not know for what I am imprisoned," Columbus wrote to a Spanish lady of rank who had been the nurse of Prince Juan. In another letter, he says that he was seized and thrown into prison, without being summoned or convicted by justice. It is probable that Bobadilla had no formal charge to make. There were many individual complaints, but they would scarcely bear investigation as charges against the Admiral; for the evils from which the colonists suffered so much were either unavoidable, or were brought about by their own faults. The great mistake which Columbus had made was in sending, and in permitting others to send, Indians to Spain to be sold as slaves. This had first distressed, and then angered Isabella; and in whatever way the slavery might be excused, by representations that these Indians were prisoners of war, or had committed grave offenses against the laws, she could not forget that these were her subjects, and that she owed them the same privileges that she gave to those of Castilian birth. Isabella was offended at the persistence of Columbus in treating the Indians as deserving slavery; Ferdinand had lost confidence in his promises of riches from these new lands; and thus Bobadilla was given the power which he used for the humiliation of the Admiral.

Bobadilla now had Columbus and his brother Diego in his power; but the Adelantado was in Xaragua, in pursuit of some rebels, and had a considerable armed force at his back. The new governor had evidently heard of his determined spirit, and feared the result that would ensue from sending to arrest him. Columbus was accordingly enjoined to write to his brother, requesting him to repair peaceably to San Domingo. He readily complied, and exhorted his fiery brother to submit to the authority of the person appointed by the sovereigns, and to endure all wrongs and indignities patiently, under the full hope that when they arrived in Castile, all would be remedied.

Thus it was that Don Bartholomew Columbus came quietly to San Domingo and rendered himself up; instead of marching at the head of his army to assault the place, rescue his brothers, and put the new governor in their place, as he doubtless would have much preferred to do. Like his brothers, he was put in irons; and they were removed from the fortress to one of the caravels, where they were confined separately, not being permitted to hold

any conversation with each other, or to be visited by any one from the city.

We need not describe the condition of affairs in the town, where every one who had a complaint to make against the late government was regarded as a patriot and a hero who had suffered at the hands of a tyrant. The vessels made ready to sail, Alonzo de Villejo being appointed to take charge of the prisoners. He was, says Las Casas, "An hidalgo of honorable character, and my particular friend." When he arrived with a guard to conduct the Admiral from the fortress to the ship, he found him in chains, silent and depressed. When he saw the officer enter with the guard, he thought that it was to conduct him to the scaffold; for though he had not had any trial, and did not know the charges against him, the treatment which he had received had been such that he could not tell where it would end.

"Villejo," said he, mournfully, "whither are you taking me?"

"To the ship, your Excellency, to embark," replied the officer with true manly respect for the misfortune of another.

"To embark?" echoed Columbus, catching at the word; "Villejo, do you speak the truth?"

"By the life of your Excellency," was the reply, "it is true!"

Such was the conversation between them, as narrated by the historian whose description of Villejo has been quoted; and doubtless Las Casas heard from the lips of his "particular friend" himself the words which passed between that friend and the great Admiral.

The caravel sailed early in October, 1500. Villejo and Andreas Martin, the master of that in which Columbus was ordered to be confined, although they were both supposed to be attached to the enemies of Columbus, were deeply grieved at the treatment which had been accorded him, and did all in their power to show, by their profound respect and assiduous attention, that they had not chosen their office as his jailers. They desired to take off his irons:

"No," he replied proudly, "their majesties commanded me by letter to submit to whatever Bobadilla should order in their name; by their authority he has put upon me these chains; I will wear them until they shall order them to be taken off, and I will preserve them afterward as relics and memorials of the reward of my services."

And he kept his word; for, says his son Fernando: "I saw them always hanging in his cabinet, and he requested that when he died they might be buried with him."

The arrival of Columbus in Cadiz produced very nearly as great a sensation as his return from his first voyage, though of a different kind; then, no honor could be too great for him; now, he was fairly hooted by the mob, an object of contempt to all. But the friendship of Martin had one good effect upon the fortunes of the Admiral; he permitted him to send off that letter to the nurse of Prince Juan by express, as soon as the vessel landed; while the re-



COLUMBUS'S RETURNING TO SPAIN IN CHAINS.

port of Bobadilla was sent by more formal and dilatory messenger. This letter was at once shown to the Queen; and was the first intimation she received that Columbus had not been treated with the respect due to him. The tide of royal and of public opinion changed at once; the enemies of Columbus had defeated their own ends by the violence with which their agent had acted. Orders were at once sent to Cadiz that the prisoners should be released, and treated with all distinction. They then wrote a letter to Columbus himself, expressing their grief that he should have been offered such indignities, and inviting him to come to court at once. Two thousand ducats were sent to pay the expenses of his journey.



HOOTED BY THE MOB.

He reached the court, and was received with marked kindness by the sovereigns. He saw tears in the eyes of the gentle Queen; and unable to suppress the feelings which this sign of sympathy called forth, he threw himself on his knees, and sobbed aloud.

The King and Queen raised him from the ground, and endeavored to encourage him by expressing their deep sense of his services. When he had regained his self-control he entered upon a vindication of his loyalty; but none was needed; the very excess of his enemies' anger showed that they were in the wrong; and the rulers disavowed the proceedings of Bobadilla, asserting that the expressions in their letter had never been meant to apply to Columbus and his brothers; and declared that he should be recalled at once.

The report of Bobadilla had not yet been received. In fact, although it must have been duly delivered, there is no record that it was ever considered. Columbus was assured that his grievances should be redressed, his property restored, and that he should be reinstated in all his privileges and dignities.

And these privileges and dignities were very dear to his heart; he considered them the real reward of his services. In his will, he directs that his heir shall call himself, and sign himself, simply "The Admiral," no matter what other titles may be bestowed upon him; for this was of all others the greatest, being the recognition of the services of Columbus in discovering the western route to India. He hoped and expected that, since the sovereigns were fully convinced that he had suffered unjustly, they would at once reinstate him as viceroy, and send him back to govern the island. But this hope was doomed to be long deferred, until, indeed, he grew sick at heart.

There is no doubt that Ferdinand repented having appointed Columbus to such high offices, as soon as it was discovered how great was the extent of the New World. Every succeeding proof of the greatness of these discoveries then only tended to make him more jealous of that foreign-born subject who had been made Admiral and Viceroy of them all. He never intended to keep the fair promises which he joined with the more sincere Isabella in making at this time, but deliberately planned to put off the fulfillment of them from time to time, by such excuses as might present themselves, until Columbus should succumb to the weight of the years which had long been pressing heavily upon him.

Although Bobadilla was recalled, Ferdinand represented to Columbus that, such was the state of the island, it would be better to have some disinterested person appointed to take his place for a certain time, although no one should ever acquire the rights which had been granted to Columbus. It is probable that this promise deceived Isabella as well as Columbus; and that she died, thinking the great Admiral was again to govern the New World which he had given to Castile.

Bobadilla's successor was Don Nicholas de Ovando; but his departure was delayed for a considerable time after his appointment. In the mean time, Bobadilla's system of government was showing its results. He had changed the rule established by Columbus, that one-third of the gold obtained should

belong to the Crown; and exacted only one-eleventh; yet the amount paid to the royal officials was more than under the old system. This enormous increase in the product was secured by exacting the labor of the natives. At first, the caciques had been compelled to set aside a certain portion of the ground for grain to be raised by the Spaniards; then the chiefs were obliged to furnish the labor required to cultivate it; then the produce of the earth was demanded as tribute; and now, the unfortunate Indians were compelled to labor at whatever task their self-constituted masters might choose to assign them.

The result may be imagined. The natives of these islands had never been obliged to work before the coming of the strangers; the soil and climate are such that food in abundance for the sparse population was produced almost spontaneously. Nor were they used to the hardships which beset so many of the Indians of North America. For these gentle, peace-loving people, there were no dangers of the chase to be encountered; there were no days spent on the war-path, no creeping through the forest upon the unwary enemy, no lying in ambush through night and storm. Every simple want supplied by nature, they seemed relieved from that burden of labor laid upon our common father Adam; they were free to dream their lives away in sweet content.

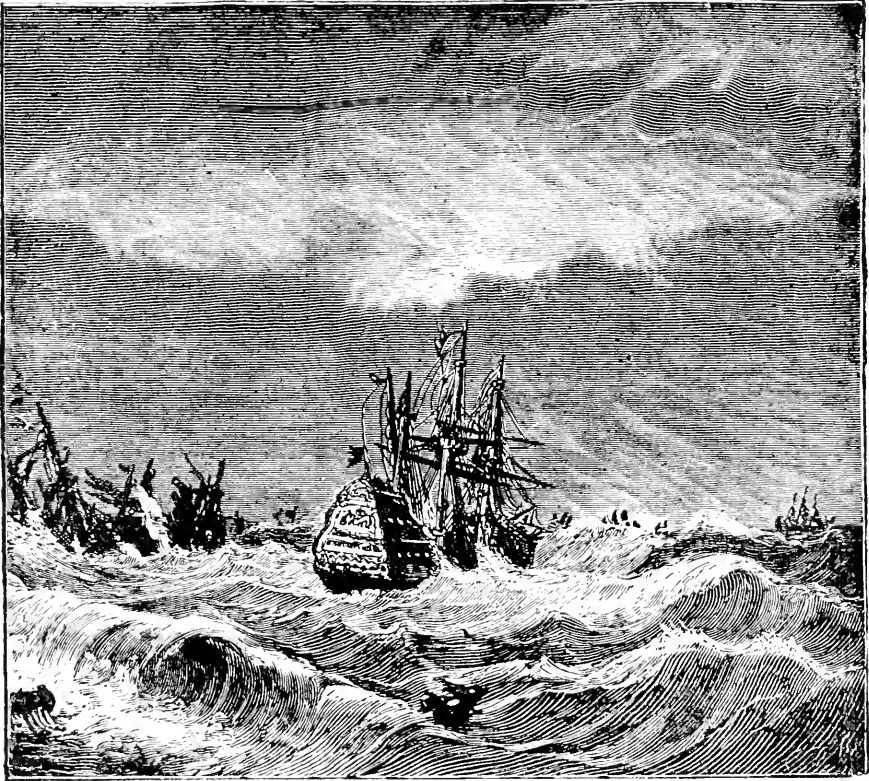
How was this now changed! Bobadilla caused a census of the Indians of Hispaniola to be taken, and distributed them among the colonists, to serve their pleasure; labor in the fields and in the mines was the least part of what they endured; the inhumanity with which they were treated may be inferred from a single example: Las Casas, who visited the island at the close of Bobadilla's term of office, says that he has seen Indians who were compelled to bear the litters or hammocks which their arrogant and upstart masters preferred to the saddle, and their shoulders were raw and bleeding from the task.

The abuses of this government reached the ears of the sovereigns; and the increased amount of gold, which could not but elicit the wonder and pleasure of Ferdinand, did not make Isabella insensible to the wrongs inflicted upon her distant subjects. In order to preserve the rights of the Indians, she allowed negro slaves to be taken to Hispaniola; and thus shifted the burden from the shoulders of one miserable set of creatures to those of another.

Ovando was further ordered to consider the interests of Columbus. All the property which Bobadilla had confiscated was to be restored; and his brothers were to be indemnified for whatever losses they had sustained by reason of their imprisonment. An agent was appointed to look after the affairs of the Admiral, and it was ordered that he should receive the arrears of his revenue, and that it should be paid punctually for the future.

Such was the bright side of the orders. On the other hand, as regards the condition of the natives under the new government, they were permitted to

be employed in the royal service; it is true that according to instructions they were to be engaged as hired laborers, and regularly paid; but they might be compelled to do this work, and this left room for nearly as many abuses as under the old system.



OYANDO'S FLEET SHATTERED IN A STORM.

Again, in a government so far removed from the mother country, and where there is no degree of representative rule, the character of the administration depends entirely upon the character of the man at the head of it. Ovando was vested with an authority which was supreme over the island; he was responsible only to the sovereigns of Spain, and in case there were any complaints to make, it would require about four months to receive an answer.

Thirty vessels formed the fleet which was to convey this potentate to his dominions; they set sail February 13, 1502. But it was not destined to reach port without difficulty; they were hardly out of sight of land when a terrible storm was encountered; and one of the ships went down with all on board. The others were compelled to throw overboard so many articles that

the coast of Spain was literally strewed with them and with wreckage for many miles; and it was reported that all the vessels had foundered. The King and Queen shut themselves up for eight days, to grieve for the loss of their fleet. After the storm, however, the remaining vessels assembled at the Canaries, and again turned their prows westward, arriving at their destination the middle of April.

Meanwhile, Columbus was considering a project which had long been in his mind. It has already been recorded that he desired to find a new route to Cathay, not in order to enrich himself, but that a sum sufficient for the purchase of the Holy Land from the Mohammedans might be realized from the commerce with these countries. At some time after the discovery, whether on his first or second return from the New World to Spain cannot be told definitely, he had made a vow to furnish, within seven years from the time of his discovery, fifty thousand foot-soldiers and five thousand cavalry for a Crusade for the recovery of the Holy Sepulchre; and to furnish a similar army, if this should not have been successful, within five years thereafter. That this vow had not been fulfilled, was his great trouble; and there is still in existence a letter written by him to Pope Alexander VI., about the time that Ovando sailed, which explains why the vow had not been fulfilled.

To Columbus, ardent and devout as he was, and filled with the old crusading idea that the Holy Land must, at any cost of blood or treasure, be recovered from the infidel, it must have been a great grief that this vow had not been fulfilled. Since he had first set eyes on San Salvador, almost ten years, freighted with cares and labors and anxieties, had passed away; and he seems now to have felt, at last, that his desire to recover the Holy Sepulchre by his own means was utterly hopeless.

But he remembered that in laying his plans before Ferdinand and Isabella, he had proposed this as one of the objects of the enterprise; and he now proceeded to arrange the arguments by which he hoped to induce them to undertake this holy war. The Scriptures, the writings of the Fathers, and all that class of literature which was held in high esteem by the Church, were all ransacked to show that there were three events destined to take place in rapid succession. Of these, the first was the discovery of the New World; the second was the conversion of the Gentiles; and the third was the recovery of the Holy Sepulchre. These arguments were embodied in a manuscript volume, and transmitted to the King and Queen, accompanied by a letter in which he eloquently urged this project which now seems so visionary upon the attention of the bigoted Ferdinand and the devout Isabella.

But Columbus knew, by sad experience, how long the decision of the Spanish sovereigns was likely to be delayed when a new and important enterprise was presented for their consideration; possibly he felt that should he gain new laurels by the discovery of yet richer countries, his recommendations

would carry more weight with them. Perhaps, too, the wandering nature that was in the Genoese sailor impelled him ever to be seeking new lands; and he was roused to emulation by the achievements of Vasco de Gama and Cabral, the former of whom had recently, for the first time in the history of the world, doubled the Cape of Good Hope and sailed from Portugal to India.

His anxiety regarding the Holy Sepulchre was set at rest sooner than he had hoped. Ferdinand was a bigot, and valued highly the title of Most Catholic King, which he had won by his wars against the Moors of Spain; but while he was quite ready to wage to its bitter end a war which was in a measure forced upon him, and which, besides being a holy war, was necessary for the preservation of his kingdom, he was yet a hard bargainer, and not insensible to the advantages of a peaceful settlement of difficulties. Instead, therefore, of raising an army for the deliverance of the Holy Sepulchre, he proceeded in what, to us of the nineteenth century, seems a much more business-like and much more Christian way: he concluded a treaty with the Grand Soldan of Egypt, under whose rule Palestine then was, which adjusted all the old difficulties between the two powers, and made arrangements for preserving the Sepulchre and protecting the pilgrims who wished to visit it.

The great discoverer, then, was entirely free to give all his attention to thoughts of new discoveries, which would not only go far beyond those of Gama and Cabral, but would eclipse his own former achievements. It was his wish to explore the coast of Cuba, which, as we have frequently shown, he believed to be a portion of the main land of Asia, and find the channel which lay between it and the islands, and which would enable him to reach those coasts, trade with which was so rapidly enriching Portugal. Many advisers of the Crown protested against his receiving the necessary grants of ships, men, money, and authority to do this; but Ferdinand, who did not trust the ability of Columbus as a governor, and who was besides jealous of the authority which he himself had joined in giving to the Admiral, knew him to be a remarkably skillful navigator; and was entirely willing that his time and attention should be so occupied with rendering new services to the Crown that he would have no time to insist upon the reward for the earlier services; and Isabella felt that it would be ungrateful, after Ovando had been given so large a fleet merely to transport him in suitable state to his post of office, to refuse a few ships to Columbus, that he might continue his discoveries.

Four caravels, ranging in size from fifty to seventy tons' burden, were given him; and one hundred and fifty men enlisted in his service. His brother, Don Bartholomew, and his second son, Fernando, a boy of thirteen, were to accompany him. His son Diego was to remain in Spain, and all the affairs of the father were to be left to his management. He had asked permission to touch at Hispaniola for supplies as he sailed past it to the coast of

the main land; but this permission was refused, on the ground that the island was still, probably, in great agitation, arising from the change of governors, and that the Admiral had many enemies in the island. The sovereigns, however, graciously allowed him to touch there briefly on his return voyage.

The voyage across the Atlantic occupied a little more than a month; the squadron sailing May 9, and arriving at one of the Caribbee Islands June 15. Sailing along by Dominica, the fleet passed along the south side of Porto Rico, and then steered for San Domingo. The Admiral was thus acting directly contrary to the expressed orders of the King and Queen; but one of his ships was such a poor sailer that it delayed the others, and he had determined to ask in exchange for it one of Ovando's vessels, or else to buy one of the trading vessels which were now permitted to ply between the two coasts of the Atlantic.

The fleet in which Ovando had reached the island was prepared for the return voyage when, June 29, Columbus approached the mouth of the river, and dispatched the captain of one of his caravels to ask permission to enter the harbor, as a storm was approaching. The request was refused by Ovando.

It seems incredible that Columbus should be refused permission to shelter his vessels in the chief harbor of that New World of which he was the discoverer; but the action of Ovando can be justified by many reasons. In the first place, the weather was not at all threatening; to the ordinary eye, there was no indication whatever that a storm was to be expected. To the Spanish Governor, then, who probably had received instructions not to permit Columbus to enter the country under his rule, it probably seemed that the Genoese navigator was only seeking an excuse to disobey the commands of the sovereigns, and to interfere in the government of the island. Added to this there were many persons in San Domingo who were bitterly adverse to Columbus; had he landed by permission of the Governor, and had these persons been able to wreak their vengeance upon him, the Governor would justly have been held responsible.

The answer was returned to Columbus; but in the meantime, the indications of an approaching storm had become, to his practiced eye, even more certain; although the pilots of the vessels could not see them. He again sent his messenger to Ovando, begging him not to allow the fleet to depart. The pilots and seamen of these vessels, as of his own, did not believe that any storm was threatened; they were anxious to put to sea; and laughing at the prophecy of the old Admiral, declared that he was a false prophet.

But Columbus had been a sailor for more than fifty years, and had acquired such weather-wisdom as few, even of those who have served the ocean so long, have been able to learn. He sought shelter in a wild harbor, and finally cast anchor at a point near the shore, but sufficiently distant from San Do-

mingo to keep his presence there from being discovered. The fleet of thirty vessels, bound for Spain, sailed out of the harbor of San Domingo. One of them, on board which was Bobadilla himself, bore the largest nugget of virgin gold that had yet been found in the New World, as well as that immense amount which had been collected, during the administration of Bobadilla, as the revenue of the Crown. It was the hopes of the tyrant that this treasure would, in the eyes of the King, atone for much of his evil government; he does not seem to have taken the Queen into account.

Within two days after it was uttered, the prophecy of Columbus regarding the storm was fulfilled. It swept over the ocean, and the thirty sail were exposed to its full fury. They had just reached the eastern end of Hispaniola when the tempest burst upon them. That proud vessel which bore Bobadilla and his ill-gotten gains, with which he hoped to bribe the conscience of a king; Roldan, the rebel against the authority of the great Admiral; and many others of his most inveterate enemies, who were going to Spain for the good of Hispaniola, were swallowed up by the angry waves; and the treasure wrung from the oppressed natives sunk with those who had thus procured it to the bed of the ocean. Other vessels were lost, besides this principal one; others were so injured by the storm that they were obliged to put back to port; only one, the weakest and least sea-worthy of all when they had left San Domingo, was able to continue the voyage to Spain. The superstitious historian, in recording this fact, does not fail to call attention to the circumstance that the favored vessel had on board four thousand pieces of gold, the property of Columbus, which his agent, recently appointed, had recovered or collected, and was forwarding to Spain; and to emphasize the statement that the most inveterate enemies of Columbus were in the vessel which perished utterly, before any others of the fleet were seriously injured.

The vessel commanded by Columbus remained close in shore, and escaped injury. The others of his squadron were driven out to sea, and so seriously injured that the whole fleet was obliged to go to Port Hermosos for repairs.

Repairing the vessels, allowing a little time to his sailors for necessary rest and recreation, and the avoidance of another storm, prevented Columbus from sailing for the mainland until July 14. Threading his way among the islands to the south of Cuba, he landed on one of a group which he named *Isla de Pinos*, from the circumstances that it was covered with very lofty pine-trees; but which island has always retained its Indian name of *Guanaja*. While they were here, a canoe eight feet wide and as long as a galley, and rowed by twenty-five men, landed, having evidently come thither on a trading expedition. The appearance of the natives, the clothing which they wore, the articles which they had brought with them, all showed a much higher degree of civilization than that which prevailed on the other islands. They told him, by signs, that they had come from a rich and populous country to the

west, and tried to induce him to visit it. Had he listened to their persuasions, he would have reached Yucatan, and thence Mexico, with the boundless stores of wealth of which Cortez became possessed a generation later. These treasures would have fulfilled the wildest dreams of the Spaniards, and Columbus, their discoverer, would again have been the favorite of the nation. But he considered that this country might be visited at any time, while, for the present, he was bent on exploring the southern coast of Asia, which would yield far greater treasures than any to which these Indians were likely to show him the way.

For sixty days after they had been refused shelter at San Domingo, the four little vessels constantly encountered storms, which only the best of seamanship enabled them to weather. The Admiral's health had long been uncertain, and now he should have taken rest; but the almost ceaseless succession of storms left him no choice; his skill and experience were constantly required; and he had a small cabin constructed on the high stern of his vessel, whence, even though confined to his bed, he could keep an outlook and direct the course of the ships. If genius be, as some one has defined it, the capacity for taking infinite pains, surely no one ever better merited to be called a genius than did Columbus.

He now steered along the coast of Honduras, and encountered, on September 12, a cape which he named Gracios a Dios, in pious thankfulness because the land there took a southerly turn, so that the east winds which had hitherto delayed him were now favorable. In October he entered several bays on the southern coast of Central America and the isthmus, but, naturally enough, could get no information from the natives of the channel which he was seeking.

The natives were generally inclined to be friendly; but in one case, being obliged to moor his vessels close by the shore, he was attacked. They fled, however, when the artillery was brought into use; like the Caribs, they could not contend with a people who were armed with the lightning.

Nor was this the only dreadful thing about these strange white people who came in the great winged canoes. At a conference held between Columbus and the natives at some point along the coast mentioned, a notary attended, to take notes of the conversation. The savages seem to have had no idea of writing; they considered its practice a kind of magic, and were not satisfied until they had burned some kind of fragrant powder between themselves and the Spaniards, to destroy the baleful influence of the spell.

December 5, they encountered a tropical cyclone, which proved so terrible that it afterward seemed a miracle that their frail vessels had lived through it. At last, after tossing about on the waters for eight days, they gained the mouth of a river which the Admiral named the Bethlehem, because he entered it on the Church festival of the Epiphany. In this neighborhood

was a powerful cacique, whom they found to be the owner of rich gold mines. He offered to supply the Spaniards with guides to conduct them to these mines, but privately instructed these guides to convoy them to the mines owned by a neighboring cacique. Here, however, in spite of the trick which had been played them, they acquired, by barter and actual discovery, a large quantity of gold, more, said the Admiral, than he had seen in Hispaniola in four years.

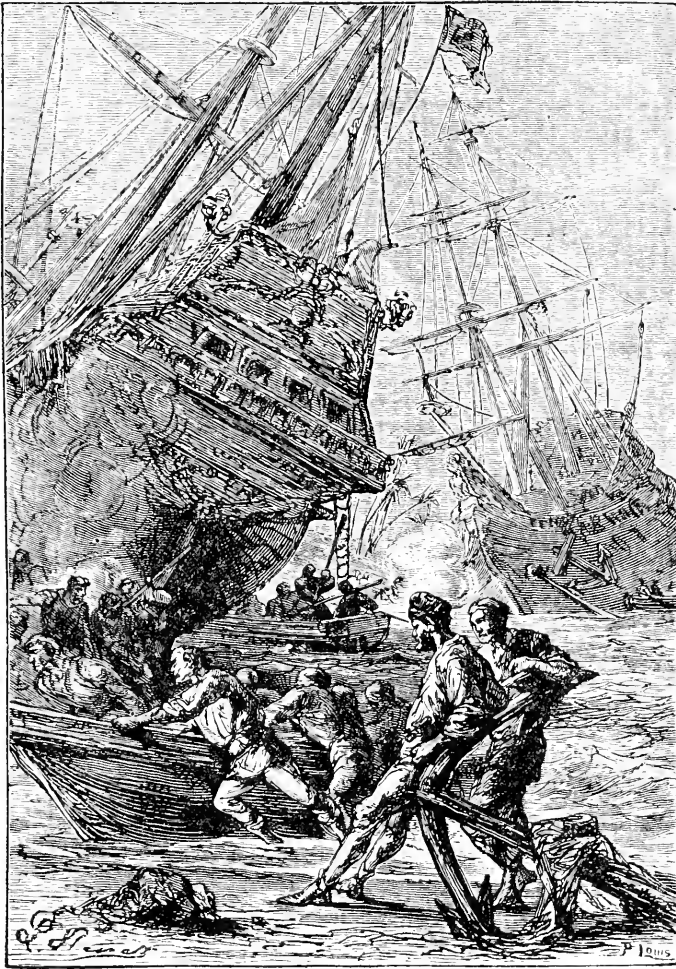
Columbus determined to found a settlement here, as a preliminary to working these rich mines and sending the product to Spain. By the end of March, 1503, a village of huts had been built, sufficient to shelter eighty men; here the Adelantado was to remain, with this number; while his brother, the Admiral, returned for supplies and tools.

Rumors reached the Adelantado, however, that the natives intended to attack the village; he marched promptly upon them, and seized the tricky chief, whom he held as a hostage. But the cacique, although bound hand and foot, managed to spring overboard and make his escape, swimming under water to the shore. Under his leadership, the angry natives attempted to burn down the village, by shooting flaming arrows upon the roofs of the huts; and a boat's crew of eleven Spaniards, who had gone some distance up the river, were attacked by the natives in canoes. One out of the eleven escaped to tell the story. The boat, the only one that they had that was sea-worthy, was of course the prey of the victors.

The weakest of the four vessels had been left with Don Bartholomew, as being scarcely fit for the homeward voyage; and the other three, with the Admiral in command, were in the offing, awaiting a favorable wind. But the dry season had made the river so shallow that it was impossible for the remaining caravel to cross the bar at its mouth, and as they had no boat that could be trusted to encounter the surf, it seemed that they were doomed to perish. At last, Ledesma, a bold pilot of Seville, encouraged by the example of some Indians who had escaped, when captured, by swimming to shore, made up his mind that he could do what they had done. He swam from the caravels, reached the shore, three miles away, in safety, and communicated with the Adelantado; and then conveyed to the Admiral the news of how things stood on shore.

In a few days the wind changed, and the would-be settlers embarking on the three vessels, the caravels stood out to sea. That one which was inside the bar had to be abandoned; and at Porto Bello the Admiral was obliged to give up another caravel as no longer sea-worthy. Leaving the coast of the main land May 31, he steered toward Cuba; but while on this part of the voyage, a collision between his two remaining ships damaged them very seriously. The small vessels, "as full of holes as a honey-comb," so worm-eaten were they and injured by the storms and accidents which they had sus-

tained, reached the southern coast of Cuba about the middle of June. Shaping his course thence for Jamaica, Columbus, finding that his ships would no longer float, ran them on shore, side by side, and built huts on deck for housing the crews.



COLUMBUS' CARAVELS AGROUND.

Diego Mendez, the lieutenant of Columbus, and a Spaniard who had shown himself, during this voyage, the boldest of his officers, undertook and performed the difficult task of establishing a regular market in which the natives traded their fruit, cassava-bread, fish, and game for such articles of European manufacture as the Spaniards possessed. But how could they communicate with their countrymen on Hispaniola! A journey to the eastern end of

Jamaica would be fraught with danger, for it would be through the midst of tribes which were not at peace with each other; so that the Spaniards would find the friendship of one a cause for dreading another. But even were that point reached in safety, they knew that there were forty leagues of rough water between the two islands; and they had no vessel in which the European sailors would risk such a voyage.

It was a case of necessity, however; and with the truest kind of courage, Mendez, having carefully considered the case, and knowing very well the dangers, volunteered to undertake the voyage around Jamaica and across to Hispaniola in a native canoe. But one other Spaniard of like courage was found to accompany him; and with six Indians, the two white men set out.

While they were detained by rough weather at the easternmost point of Jamaica, they were attacked by a number of savages, and, by sheer force of numbers, overpowered and carried off as captives. But Mendez had taken with him some beads and other trinkets to use in barter with the natives; and while the captors were quarreling over this rich spoil, the captives escaped, and, managing to reach their canoe, returned in safety to their comrades at Santa Gloria.

Mendez was ready to try it again; but he stipulated that a sufficient force to guard against such accidents must accompany him to the most eastern point of the island. His courage was not without result, for, because of the example which he had set, a dozen of his comrades volunteered to try the dangerous voyage; and in two canoes, with an armed escort on shore commanded by the Adelantado, the intrepid lieutenant again set out.

The two canoes reached the shore of Hispaniola in safety; and Mendez, leaving his companions, proceeded alone to San Domingo, to ask for the help which was needed. The Governor had left for Xaragua; and Mendez made his way alone, through a hundred and fifty miles of wild forest country, to deliver the message of the Admiral.

Ovando received him with great kindness. He could not find words to express his trouble at hearing of the situation in which Columbus was placed. Certainly he would send the help which was asked, only at present it was impossible, because there were no vessels of sufficient burden at San Domingo. And thus, for seven weary months, he put off, from day to day, and from week to week, the request of Mendez. At last, Mendez received permission to go to San Domingo and await the arrival of certain ships which were expected, one of which he might perhaps purchase for the use of the Admiral. He at once set off, on foot, although the distance was more than two hundred miles—for he had followed Ovando from place to place—and the path was neither safe nor easy.

While Ovando was thus temporizing, ashamed to refuse help, and afraid to give it, the castaways at Santa Gloria did not even know if their envoys had

reached Hispaniola or not. It might have been supposed that they would not blame Columbus with what had occurred; that they knew too well that their misfortunes were the work of the elements. Nothing of the kind; the Admiral was responsible for all that they had suffered: it was the business of the Admiral to take them back to Spain. The murmuring grew louder and louder, until it reached the ear of Columbus himself.

Francesco Porras was chosen as the leader of the mutineers; and one day in January he went to the Admiral, who was confined to his bed by the gout, and stated plainly the intentions of the people. The Admiral, said Porras, was evidently afraid to return to Spain; but the people had determined that they would not remain to perish; they intended to depart at once. The followers of Porras had pressed close upon his heels, even into the sick-room of the commander; and as these words were spoken, they shouted, as with one voice:—

“To Castile! To Castile! We follow!”

It was useless for the Admiral to tell them, as he tried to, that there was great danger in leaving the island in the canoes which were the only vessels which they had; and that they were blind indeed if they could not see that his interest was the same as theirs. They would not listen; but seizing upon all the canoes, the mutineers set out; only such as were sick remaining with Columbus and his brother.

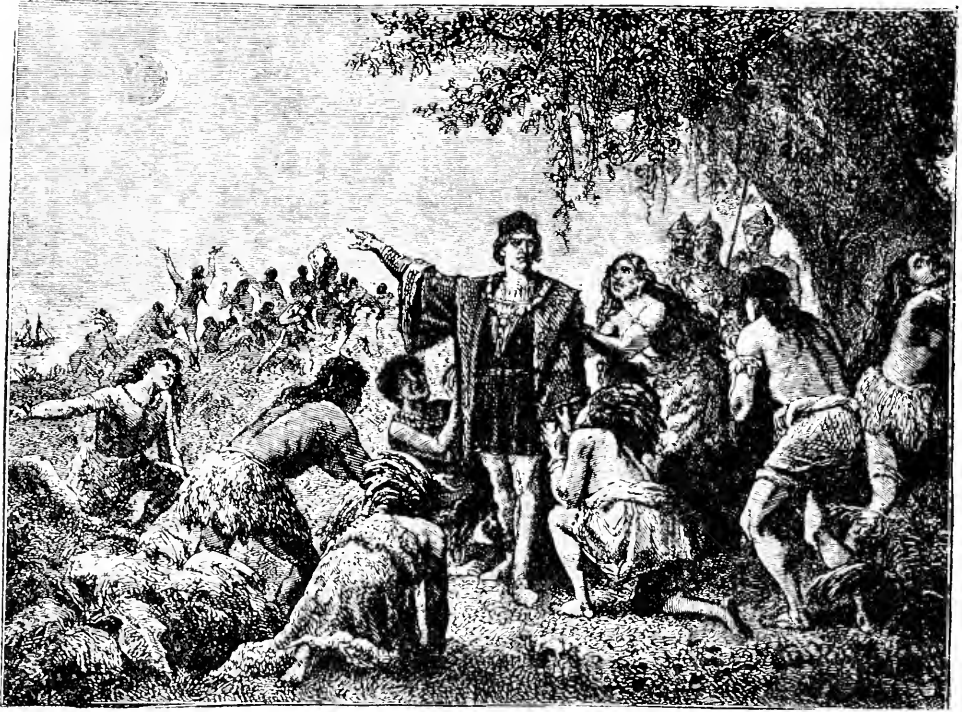
Porras and his followers made several attempts to cross to Hispaniola, but were prevented by storms. Thus foiled, they proceeded to roam over the islands, committing every excess that imagination could devise, and in every way making themselves objects of hatred and terror to the natives.

Unable to distinguish between just and honorable men, such as the Spaniards under the rule of Columbus had seemed, and the ruffian horde of Porras, when both classes were white and apparently of the same kindred, the Indians showed contempt and hatred for the few remaining at Santa Gloria: food could no longer be obtained from them; famine stared the Admiral and his followers in the face.

It was in this dilemma that he determined to pit his science against their superstition. He knew that an eclipse of the moon would take place on a certain night. Of course, the Indians, who lived in the open air, had frequently witnessed such phenomena; but eclipses appear at such irregular intervals that the unlearned natives could not know with what certainty these obscurations can be foreseen. He accordingly assembled the caciques and their principal subjects, and assuming that Mendez had reached his destination, thus addressed them through an interpreter:—

“The God who protects me will punish you. You know what has happened to those of my followers who have rebelled against me, and the dangers which they encountered in their attempt to cross to Hayti; while those who

went at my command made the passage without difficulty. Soon, too, shall the divine vengeance fall on you; this very night shall the moon change her color and lose her light, in testimony of the evils which shall be sent upon you from the skies."



COLUMBUS AND THE ECLIPSE.

The natives listened, but little impressed by what was said. But as the shadow began to creep over the face of the moon, they became less scornful; and as the dimness increased, they drew together in affright. Now one set up a cry; it was echoed again and again; and the most doleful howls filled the air. They crept to the very feet of Columbus, and begged him to intercede for them: he should want for nothing, only let the threatened danger be averted. As a proof of their sincerity, they hastily collected such food as they could readily lay their hands upon, and brought it to him.

Columbus pretended to turn a deaf ear to their solicitations; but finally, at the time when he knew that the eclipse must soon begin to pass off, he relented, and promised to intercede for them. He retired to his cabin, where they supposed that he performed some kind of strange rite, which caused the shadow to pass from the face of the moon, in token that their repentance and promise of better things were acceptable to the white man's God. Hence-

forward the castaways suffered no more hunger, but were most abundantly supplied with food.

Since the mutiny of Porras and his companions, Columbus had gradually won back many of the rebels to his side; but there was constant dissatisfaction, and soon another mutiny was on the point of breaking out. Before it had quite come to a head, however, a ship was descried standing toward the harbor; how eagerly it was watched by these poor shipwrecked creatures, who had almost lost hope of seeing home again, we can scarcely understand.

The vessel was of small size, too small to have been sent to convey them to Hispaniola or to Spain; but there might be messages of cheer borne by it. They watched a boat lowered over the side, and rowed toward the land. As it approached, they saw, seated in the post of honor, Diego de Escobar, a man whom Columbus had condemned to death for participation in the Roldan mutiny, but who had been pardoned by Bobadilla. Coming alongside the ships, Escobar put aboard a letter from Ovando and a cask of wine and a side of bacon, which two last articles he said that Ovando intended as a token of his esteem and good will for Columbus; and withdrew to a distance, so that communication must be kept up by shouting aloud. Columbus was assured that Ovando greatly regretted the fact that he had no vessels of sufficient size to afford the relief desired; but that one would be sent as soon as possible. The messenger requested that any letter to the Governor might be written as soon as possible, for he was in a hurry to be off. Columbus accordingly prepared an answer to the letter which he had received, and Escobar immediately put to sea.

The choice of a man well known as an enemy of Columbus to act as messenger in this instance shows that Ovando was not well disposed toward the Admiral; but Columbus made the best of it; and assured his followers, who were much disappointed that the vessel should sail off so quickly, that Escobar had been sent to convey to Hispaniola a portion of his command; but that he, the Admiral, had refused to leave any of his followers behind him, on a wild and inhospitable coast like that of Jamaica. There is no evidence that they quite believed these assurances; but they could not contradict them, since only the Admiral knew the contents of the letters; and Escobar had not permitted any communication between his men and the castaways.

Columbus sent half the bacon and wine as a peace-offering to the mutineers, with whom he was anxious to make terms; but his overtures were scornfully rejected; and Porras persuaded his followers that Escobar's caravel, which they had all seen, was nothing but an apparition conjured up by the magic arts of Columbus; for a man who possessed such strange instruments, and was so learned about the stars, and could foretell storms when there were no signs that any one else could see, and could find his way about the waters like this man, must of course be a magician or a sorcerer.

There was good reason why Porras should have thus persuaded his followers; for he was even then planning a descent upon the ships, to seize the few remaining stores and capture the Admiral. The Adelantado received information of this; and placing himself at the head of fifty men, all that the little force could furnish, marched against the mutineers, attacked them, and ended by defeating them and carrying off their leader as a prisoner.

The mutineers at once submitted unconditionally to the Admiral, who pardoned them for their revolt against his authority; reserving the ringleader for future punishment. His offense was, according to the laws of every nation, then as now, a capital one; and Columbus, as Viceroy and Admiral, was certainly empowered to try such offenders and pronounce and execute sentence when they had been found guilty; but he judged it best to defer this action until he had other spectators than a handful of men who had either been lately brought back under his authority, or who had been on the point of rebelling against it, though they had not actually done so.

June 24, 1503, the two weather-beaten vessels had found shelter at Santa Gloria; June 28, 1504, two caravels arrived to convey them to Hispaniola. One of these had been sent by the tardy Ovando; the other by the faithful Mendez.

The voyage was a long and stormy one; and the vessels did not reach San Domingo until the 13th of August. Much to the surprise of Columbus, Ovando received him in state, proceeding to the harbor, attended by a numerous suite, for that purpose. But this was only an empty show of respect; he soon announced that he intended to institute a general inquiry as to the affairs which had taken place in Jamaica, in order to decide whether Porras and his associates had been justified in their rebellion against the Admiral's authority; and he insisted upon releasing Porras.

"My authority as Viceroy must have sunk low indeed," remarked Columbus, sadly, "if it does not enable me to punish those of my officers who mutiny against me."

But Ovando possessed the actual power, and Porras was released. Columbus determined to return to Spain; and set sail, in the caravel which Mendez had sent to Jamaica for him, a month after his arrival at San Domingo. It seemed that storms pursued him wherever he went; for twice his little vessel nearly foundered; twice, in successive tempests, her masts were sprung. Disease laid her hand yet more heavily upon him than ever before; and it was a man who possessed neither means, nor health, nor favor with the sovereigns, nor hope of any better things to come, who landed from the frail and battered vessel at Seville, Nov. 7, 1504.

Through all his troubles, since he had first found an advocate in the person of Juan Perez de Marchena, he had had one powerful friend; at times, her ear had been poisoned by the reports of his enemies; but always, when

she heard the truth, or even when, without hearing any other side of the story, she reflected upon the service which Columbus had rendered, and thought what manner of man he was, Isabella of Castile had shown her true greatness by her appreciation of the great Admiral. But now, even this friend failed him. The death of her son, of her grandson and heir, of her favorite daughter, and the insanity of her remaining daughter, combined to make the great Queen one of the most unhappy of women. A deep melancholy settled upon her; and when Columbus arrived at Seville, it was well known that she had not long to live.

He was too ill to go to court, even had he been certain that he would be well received; and he sent his son Diego to manage his affairs for him. But he heard no news from there; couriers are arriving every day, he says, but none for him, though he would desire to have news every hour.

Nov. 26, the Queen died; and the noblest epitaph that has been written upon her is contained in a letter of her greatest servant, written to his son Diego, in haste and brevity, just as he received the news:—

“The principal thing is to commend affectionately, and with great devotion, the soul of the Queen our sovereign to God. Her life was always catholic and holy, and prompt to all things in his Holy service; for this reason we may rest assured that she is received into His glory, and beyond the cares of this rough and weary world.”

During the remainder of the winter and spring, Columbus remained at Seville, too ill to bear a journey; but, active in mind, directing the efforts which were made to obtain a recognition of his services and a redress of his wrongs from Ferdinand. One of the persons employed by him in his missions to the court was Americus Vespucius, who is described by Columbus as a worthy but unfortunate man, who had not profited as much as he deserved by his undertakings, and who had always been disposed to render him—Columbus—service. It was expected that Vespucius could prove the value of the latest discoveries of Columbus, since he had recently touched at the same coasts.

Not until May was Columbus able to make the short journey that was required. His applications made by proxy had been listened to coldly; and no sign had been given that those in authority thought that the Viceroy of the New World had any right or interest in its concerns. Columbus himself cared little for the revenues that he should have derived from mining and commerce; but he was exceedingly anxious that his dignities should be restored. He cared not to be a rich man, or to leave his heirs a vast accumulation of money; but he was, by solemn agreement with the sovereigns, Admiral of the Ocean and Viceroy of India; these titles, according to that same agreement, were to descend to his children; and he desired that Ferdinand should recognize his own action of previous years.



DEATH OF COLT MURDER.

This the King was in no hurry to do, however; the causes of delay have already been given. He did not refuse absolutely; for the breach of faith would have been too flagrant; but he delayed as long as he could, and ended by referring the matter to the Board of Discharges of the Royal Conscience.

The title of this august body sounds like it might have originated in one of the novels of Dickens; but there was actually such a board in Spain at the beginning of the sixteenth century; it had been appointed since the death of the Queen, to superintend the fulfilling of her will. Two consultations were held regarding the affairs of Columbus; but the Board was placed in a delicate position; nominally appointed to carry out the will of Isabella, they knew very well what she would have wished; but the King was a living power, and they were just as sure of his wishes as of hers. Nothing was settled in regard to this difficult question.

Columbus endeavored to console himself with the idea that the King was but waiting to consult his daughter Juana, who was her mother's heir, and who was daily expected to come from Flanders with her husband; but Juana's coming was rendered uncertain by her frequent attacks of insanity, which deranged all the plans made for her. In fact, however, Ferdinand had no intention of consulting any one; he knew that Columbus was fast sinking under the weight of years and infirmities, and he was determined to delay his decision until the great man should be placed beyond all reward.

Still he was profuse in his compliments to Columbus, though showing him no signs of real favor. Finally, not having been able to exhaust the patience of Columbus entirely, he offered to compromise the case by giving him, in place of his New World dignities, titles and estates in Castile. The offer was rejected with indignation by the Admiral, who justly considered his proudest title to be that which linked his name with the history of his discoveries. And at last he despaired. He wrote to his friend, Diego de Deza:—

“It appears that his majesty does not think fit to fulfill that which he, with the Queen, who is now in glory, promised me by word and seal. For me to contend for the contrary would be to contend with the wind. I have done all that I could do. I leave the rest to God, whom I have ever found propitious to me in my necessities.”

Yet, even after writing thus, he felt one last gleam of hope; it might be that Queen Juana and her husband, when they came to take possession of the throne of Castile, would hear him. They had arrived in Spain; but Columbus was again utterly prostrated, and could not go to Laredo to present his suit. His faithful brother, the Adelantado, undertook the mission. He was received with respect, and listened to graciously; the claims of the Admiral received due attention from the young sovereigns of Castile, and there was every reason to believe that there would be a speedy and prosperous termination of his suit.

But even while hope was thus dawning anew, darkness was approaching, like a storm at morning. The great discoverer had made many voyages; first to every part of the known world, and then to mark out a path to the New World; he was now about to set out on that last journey, to—

“That undiscovered country from whose bourne
No traveler returns.”

As the spring of 1506 progressed, it was seen that his malady was gradually assuming a worse form than ever. He set his house in order, making a military testament May 4, and supplementing this by a formal will drawn up about two weeks later. Providing for the maintenance and perpetuity of his family and dignities, he ordered his heir to build in Hispaniola a chapel where masses might be said daily for the repose of the souls of himself, his parents, his wife, and all who died in the faith. He provided that his heir was to call himself always The Admiral, no matter what other titles might be given him; and directed that measures should be taken to insure his remembrance in Genoa, the city of his birth. Provision was also made for the payment of various debts and rewards for services.

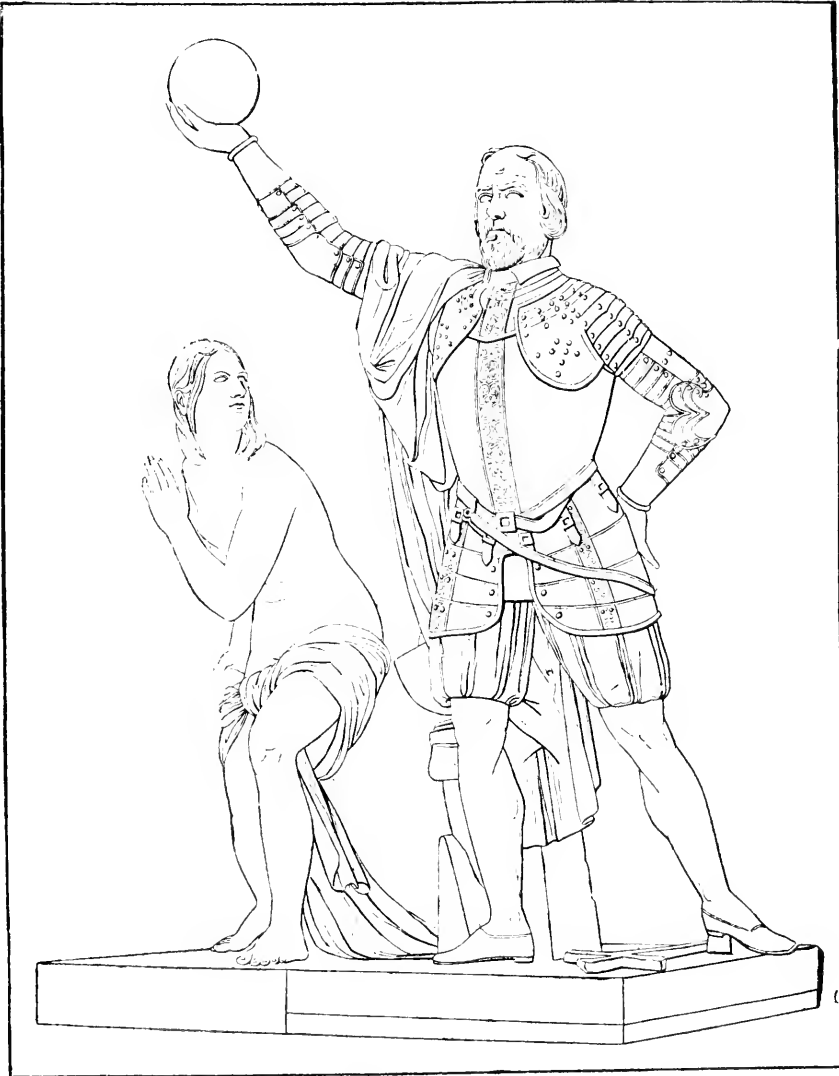
Having attended to every claim upon his loyalty, affection and justice, Columbus turned his thoughts from earth forever, and received the last sacraments of that Church of which he had been so devout a member. As death drew near, he murmured the words, sanctified by so many associations:—

In manus tuas, Domine, commendo spiritum meum—“Into Thy hands, O Lord, I commend my spirit:”—and passed quietly away.

His body was at first deposited in the convent of San Francisco, but in 1513 was removed to the Carthusian monastery of Las Cuevas at Seville. Twenty-three years later, his remains, with those of his son Diego, who had been buried beside him, were removed to Hispaniola, and re-interred in the principal chapel of the cathedral at San Domingo. But, a wanderer throughout life, even his dust was not permitted to rest in peace; and toward the close of the eighteenth century, all the Spanish possessions in Hispaniola having been ceded to France, Spain retained possession of the ashes of her greatest servant, and removed them to the cathedral at Havana. The removal was performed with all the pomp and ceremony befitting the funeral services of the Admiral and the Viceroy of the Indies.

“When we read of the remains of Columbus, thus conveyed from the port of San Domingo, after an interval of nearly three hundred years, as sacred national relics, with civic and military pomp, and high religious ceremonial; the most dignified and illustrious men striving who most should pay them reverence, we cannot but reflect that it was from this very port he was carried off, loaded with ignominious chains, blasted apparently in fame and fortune, and followed by the revilings of the rabble. Such honors, it is true, are nothing to the dead, nor can they atone to the heart, now dust and ashes, for

all the wrongs and sorrows it may have suffered; but they speak volumes of comfort to the illustrious, yet slandered and persecuted living, encouraging them bravely to bear with present injuries, by showing them how true merit outlives all calumny, and receives its glorious reward in the admiration of after ages."—*Washington Irving.*



STATUE OF COLUMBUS ON THE PORTICO OF THE CAPITOL AT WASHINGTON.

CHAPTER VI.

AMERICUS VESPUCIUS.

Is "America" an Indian Word?—A City of Merchants—The Vespucci Family—Education—A Family Misfortune—Americus in Spain—Connection with Columbus—First Voyage of Vespucci—South America Discovered—An American Venice—Attacked by Natives—An Inland Visit—Friendly Natives—Repairing the Vessels—A Mission of Vengeance—A Desperate Conflict—Return to Spain—Disputes about the Voyages of Vespucci—Marriage—Visit to Court—Ojeda's Expedition—Second Voyage of Vespucci—Off the Coast of South America—Gentle Cannibals—Landing of the Spaniards Disputed—A Village of Giants—A Filthy Habit—Return to Spain—A Flattering Offer—His Third Voyage—A Stormy Passage—Land at Last—An Earthly Paradise—An Invitation Accepted—Murdered by Cannibals—Revenge Forbidden—Vespucci becomes Commander—Off the Coast of Africa—Return to Portugal—The Fourth Voyage of Vespucci—Misfortunes—An Anxious Condition—South America Again—A Colony Planted—Return to Lisbon—To Spain—Preparations for New Expedition—Causes of Delay—New Tasks Proposed—Appointed Chief Pilot of Spain—Visits Florence—His Death—His Family—Foundations of His Fame—Accusations—Original Application of the Name America.

THERE has been some effort made, of recent years, to show that the name America is really derived from an Indian word; and that the man whose name heads the present chapter derived it, as a surname, from the fact that he journeyed to the new-found continent, and wrote much about it. It is possible that in some of the languages or dialects of the various tribes of Indians there is a word, resembling in sound the name of America, which was applied to their country, or even to land in general; the western continent being the only large body of land with which they had any acquaintance; but Vespucci certainly did not derive his name from any circumstance connected with his explorations or writings; for a letter written by him in 1478 is signed "Amerigo Vespucci."

Dismissing this theory at the outset, then, we proceed to study the life of the man from whom the New World received its name. He belonged to a noble family which had originally lived a few miles from Florence, but under the government of that city. About the beginning of the thirteenth century, however, the representatives of the Vespucci established themselves in the city itself; and from that time they have remained identified with it.

Florence was in many respects a peculiar city. Rich and powerful, its nobles were proud of their long descent, of their stainless honor, of their patronage of the arts and sciences, of their high station and the estimation in which they were held by others. In these things they resembled the nobles of other nations. But unlike others, they saw no shame in engaging in commerce; the city was a city of merchants, and her rulers were among the most successful of the great mercantile families.

Anastasio Vespucci, Secretary of the Senate of Florence, was the head of the family in 1451, and lived in a stately mansion, now occupied as a hospital for the poor, near the gate of the city now known as Porta del Prato. The Vespucci coat of arms appears over the doors of many houses in this quarter



AMERICUS VESPUTIUS.

of the city, indicating that the family was not without a share of this world's goods; their wealth seems to have been acquired by an ancestor, some time before the date specified; and Anastasio had but little besides his palatial dwelling and the salary attaching to his high office. Yet the name was a well-known one in Florence; for the wealthy ancestor had built more than one

hospital for the suffering poor, and a magnificent chapel, where his own and his wife's remains still repose.

March 9, 1451, the third son of this official was born, and duly christened Amerigo when three days old. The name had descended to him from an ancestor who had filled a high office in 1336; how much older it was, or how many had borne it during that century, we do not know.

Almost from his cradle, the boy was destined to become a merchant. This did not mean that he was early to be confined to the drudgery of the counting-house; he must first receive such education as Florence could give to the son of an old and distinguished family. His father's brother, a monk of the Order of San Marco, was a distinguished scholar; and before the birth of Americus had become famous as a teacher of the noble youths of the city. To this school went the future navigator.

Mathematics, astronomy, cosmography, and the classics, seem to have comprised his principal studies; and he became especially interested in geography. It was his ambition to excel as a geographer; and with this aim, it is not to be wondered at that he sought the society of the great Toscanelli, that cosmographer to whom Columbus submitted the first draught of his wonderful scheme, and who so warmly approved the idea of the Genoese adventurer.

Americus seems to have remained a student under his uncle's direction for a number of years. His studies were interrupted in 1478, when the plague appeared at Florence and the Vespuccis sought safety in the country. He appears, however, to have resumed them on his return to the city, after the pestilence had run its course.

Just when it was that he fulfilled the wishes of his father, and entered upon mercantile pursuits, we have no record: but it is certain that he did so at some time between the year 1478 and 1490. But however busily engaged in commercial operations he may have been, he never lost his early interest in geography; all the best maps, charts and globes obtainable were bought by him, however high the price; and we have already noted that for one map he paid a sum equivalent to five hundred and fifty-five dollars of United States money.

About the year 1480, his elder brother, Girolamo, had left home to seek his fortune in foreign climes, and had established himself in business in a city of Asia Minor. As time went on, the entire family contributed of their means to increase his capital; for he was very prosperous, and needed only to increase his operations to become immensely wealthy in a short time. Things went well with him until one day, while he was at church, thieves broke into his house and robbed him of all that he possessed.

The circumstances that made it possible for the thieves to secure so much booty are not clearly described; we are interested only in the result of the robbery. The family was so impoverished that Americus determined to leave

Florence, to retrieve his brother's losses by making greater gains elsewhere; and he selected Spain as the scene of his future labors.

Many young nobles from other countries were then in Spain, under the banner of Ferdinand and Isabella; for the war which these sovereigns were waging against the Moorish kingdoms in the southern part of the peninsula was regarded as a holy war, a Christian crusade against the Infidel; and reputation and military experience were to be gained by engaging in it. Of course, this made many wants to be supplied by merchants and bankers; and Italian business men were quick to take advantage of the situation. Vespuccius went as the agent of one of the Medici, the ruling family of Florence; he was commissioned to deal with Berardi, an Italian who had already established himself in Spain; and the esteem in which he was held in his native city is shown by the fact that a number of young men accompanied him, to see the world of business under his supervision.

At the beginning of 1492 he was associated in business with one Donato Nicollini; but he was also closely connected with Berardi, who, after the return of Columbus from his first voyage, was commissioned to furnish and equip four armaments, to be sent out to the New World at different times.

Some writers have supposed that Vespuccius accompanied Columbus on his second voyage; but the probabilities are against his having done so. The acquaintance of Columbus and Vespuccius probably began after the great discoverer returned from his first voyage. The merchant was greatly excited by the reports of the discoveries of Columbus and had eagerly investigated them; but he arrived at very different conclusions from those supported by Columbus. He thought, for one thing, that Columbus, Toscanelli, and other geographers of the time were greatly mistaken in their estimate of the distance from the western coast of Europe to the Eastern coast of Asia; and, while we cannot positively say when the idea was first formed, he shows, by his letters, that he had a very clear notion that Cuba was not the main land, as Columbus supposed it to be, long before that great island was circumnavigated.

Juan Berardi, the head of the mercantile house with which Vespuccius had connected himself on first coming to Spain, died in December, 1495, and the management of affairs devolved upon the junior partner. But he wearied of seeking the favors of fortune; he determined to abandon mercantile affairs, and direct his attention "to something more laudable and stable." It is thus, in a letter directed to an old schoolmate, that he speaks of visiting the various parts of the world.

Contrary to the agreement which had been made with Columbus, the sovereigns, after his second voyage, permitted private adventurers to prosecute discoveries in the West Indies; and even assisted in fitting out fleets for other leaders than the Admiral. One of these leaders was that Ojeda

who had done so much to subdue the natives of Hispaniola; and his squadron consisted of four vessels. Americus Vespuccius was one of those who accompanied him; according to some accounts, as one of the principal pilots; according to the explanations of others, as a sort of agent of the sovereigns, having a voice in the direction of the ships, and thus classed as a pilot and captain.

May 10, 1497, they left Cadiz; and after reaching the Canaries, sailed so rapidly that at the end of twenty-seven days they came in sight of land. This they judged to be a continent, although he does not tell us what were the grounds for supposing it to be so. They anchored, and attempted to hold some intercourse with the natives; but the Indians proved so shy that they sought a more secure anchorage.

This difficulty in communicating with the natives lasted for some days; but finally they managed to get near enough to the inhabitants to display the articles which they had brought for the purpose of making presents or trading; and won the good-will of the savages by gifts. The news of the strangers' generosity spread along the coast, and for some time, wherever they went, they were well received.

Coasting along the shore of South America—for they were right in supposing this to be a continent—they came upon a village, which, much to their surprise, was built after the Venetian fashion; the houses, upon piers in the water, had entrances by means of draw-bridges; so that the inhabitants, by leaving the bridges down, could traverse the whole town without difficulty.

In allusion to the city which this village resembled, they called it Venezuela; a name which has endured to the present day. At the first sign of the newcomers, the inhabitants had shut themselves up in their houses, and raised the draw-bridges; and as the ships came nearer, the savages embarked in their canoes and rowed out to sea.

Twenty-two of these small vessels approached the larger ones from across the water; and the Spaniards made every sign of friendship that ingenuity could suggest, inviting the Indians to come nearer. As the invitation was disregarded, they thought to go toward them; but at the first indication of this intention, the Indians turned their canoes toward the land, and hastened away; making signs for the Spaniards to wait where they were, for their return.

They came back, bringing with them sixteen young girls, as if these would be the means of making peace. So impressed were the Europeans by the trust which the Indians evidently reposed in them, that their suspicions were not awakened by the sight of numbers swimming toward the ships.

Suddenly, they noticed that some of the women, at the doors of the huts, were wailing and tearing their hair, as if in great distress. While they were

wondering what this meant, the girls, as if by one impulse, sprang from the boats which they had entered from the canoes, and the Spaniards discovered that every man in the canoes had a bow and arrows, and every man swimming around them in the sea had a lance. Hardly had they noted this, before they were furiously assailed.

The Spaniards not only defended themselves, but took the offensive. They overturned several of the canoes, killed fifteen or twenty, and wounded many more; taking two girls and three men prisoners. "Conscientious scruples," a rare thing among these old navigators, prevented them from burning the town, and they returned to their ships, where the three men whom they had captured were put in irons. However, morning showed that this latter precaution had been ineffectual in one case; for, during the night, the two girls and one of the men "escaped in the most artful manner in the world."

The next day, keeping their course continually along the coast, they came to anchor about eighty leagues from this New World Venice, and saw a throng of about four thousand persons gathered on the shore. These, however, did not wait to receive them, but fled to the woods as the Spaniards let down their boats.

The white men followed them, and found their camp, where two of them were engaged in cooking iguanas, an animal which the early discoverers and explorers were accustomed to describe as a serpent, and to regard with much horror as an article of food, until some one of them found himself virtually compelled by circumstances to taste it; and found the flesh so delicious that he never again hesitated to eat of it. The two cooks fled, of course; but the whites, in order to reassure the natives, disturbed nothing in the camp, but left many of their own articles in the rude tents.

Efforts to make friends with them proved more successful the next day; and when the Indians saw the two prisoners that the Spaniards had taken, they were doubly friendly; for these men belonged to a tribe with which they were at war. They finally informed the whites that this was not their dwelling; that they had merely come here for the fishing; and invited the strangers to go with them to their villages, for they wished to receive them as friends.

This invitation seems to have been received with no great satisfaction by the whites; for Vespucci says:—

"They importuned us so much, that, having taken counsel, twenty-three of us Christians concluded to go with them, well prepared, and with firm resolution to die manfully, if such was to be our fate."

After remaining for three days at the fishing-camp, they set out for the interior; where they visited so many villages that they were nine days on the journey, and their comrades on board the vessels grew very uneasy about them.

They were escorted back by a great number of the savages, both men and women; and their guides were so eager to serve them that they were not permitted to fatigue themselves at all. Did a white man seem tired of the walk? A hammock was ready, slung on the shoulders of strong and willing Indians. Did one of them find it impossible to carry the presents which had been given him? Another hammock was at hand, and the presents stowed in that; while the bearers proved absolutely honest. Was there a river to be crossed? For every white man, there was a stout Indian back, ready to receive this burden.

Arrived at the shore, their boats were almost swamped by the number of those who wished to accompany them; while swarms who could not get into the boats swam alongside to the ships. So many came aboard, that the mariners were quite troubled; not being quite secure against sudden treachery. As the savages were naked and unarmed, however, they subdued their fears; contenting themselves with an effort to impress the natives with a sense of their power, by discharging a cannon. This so frightened them, says Vespuccius, that many of them leaped into the seas as suddenly as frogs sitting on a bank plunge into the marsh at the first sound that alarms them. Those who remained were reassured by the mariners; and took leave of them with many demonstrations of affection.

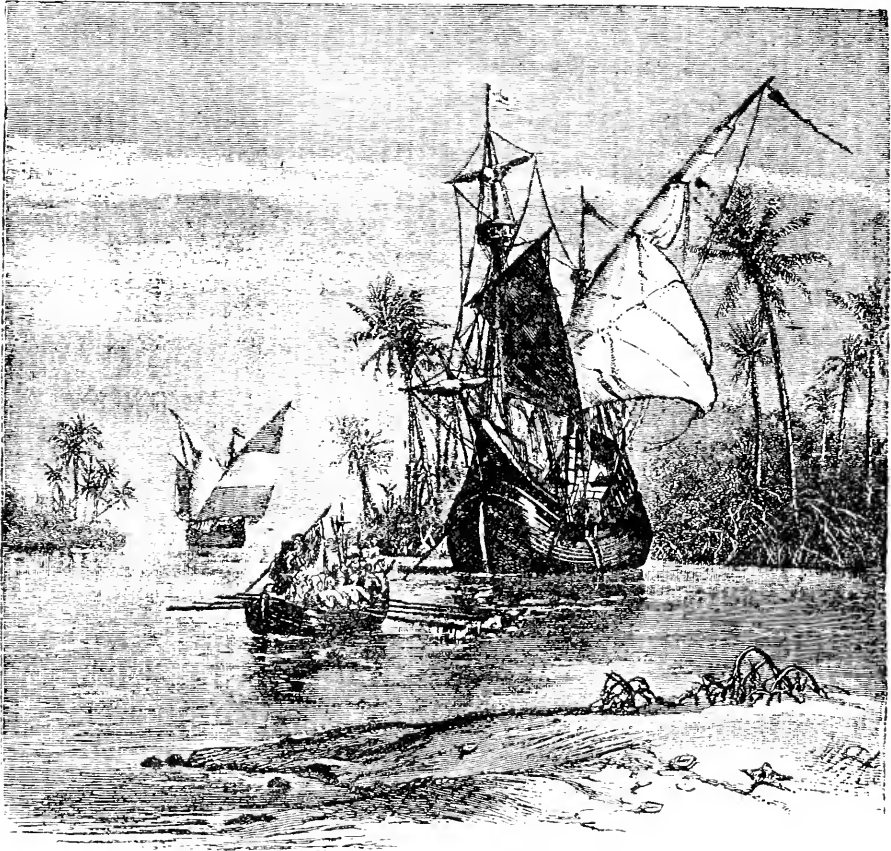
They had now been thirteen months at sea, and the ships and rigging were much worn. By common consent they agreed to careen their vessels on the beach, in order to calk and pitch them anew, as they leaked badly, and then to return to Spain. They made a breastwork of their boats and casks, and placed their artillery so that it would play over them; then having unloaded and lightened their ships, hauled them to land, and repaired them wherever they needed it.

Although they had made such elaborate preparations for repulsing any attack which the natives might have made upon them, the Indians gave no sign of hostility, but brought them such quantities of food that they consumed a very little of their own stores. This was a fortunate thing; for their provisions were so much reduced in quantity that the mariners feared they would not have enough to last them until they got back to Spain. Thirty-seven days were thus spent in repairing the vessels.

Before they set sail, the natives complained to them that at certain times in the year there came from the sea to their country a very cruel tribe, who, either by treachery or force, killed many of them and ate them; capturing others, and carrying them away as captives. Against these enemies, said the friendly natives, they were not able to defend themselves; and, when the Spaniards promised to avenge their injuries, no words could express their gratitude. Many offered to go with them; but the whites wisely rejected such offers, and permitted but seven to accompany them; these going upon the express condition that they should return in their own canoes.

Taking a northeasterly course, at the end of seven days they fell in with some islands, many of which were peopled. On one of these, which they found was called by the natives Iti, they landed; but not without difficulty.

As the boats were lowered, the Spaniards saw about four hundred men and women gather on the beach, the men armed with bows and arrows and lances, their naked bodies painted with various colors, while feathers were liberally used as ornaments. As the strangers approached within bowshot of the shore, these savages sent a flight of arrows at them, in determined effort to prevent them from landing.



VESPUCIUS EXPLORING THE NEW COUNTRY.

So persistent were they in their efforts to prevent the Spaniards from landing, that the latter finally concluded to use their artillery. A round was fired; and the astonished Indians, hearing the thunder, and seeing some of their number fall dead, hastily retreated. Forty of the whites resolved to leap

ashore and fight with the islanders. They fought for about two hours without any decisive victory on either side; some of the Indians were killed, and some of the whites were injured. It was only when the newcomers succeeded in making it a hand-to-hand combat, where the temper of their swords counted for more than quickness or accuracy of aim, that they were enabled to beat off the Indians.

Tired out, the whites were glad enough to return to their vessels. The next day, the natives again approached the shore, making many hostile demonstrations. A force of fifty-seven men was sent ashore, Americus being then, as on the previous day, one of the fighters; this body landed without resistance, for the natives feared the cannon.

After a long battle, having killed many, the strangers put the islanders to flight, and pursued them to a village, taking about twenty-five—according to some authorities, two hundred and fifty—prisoners. They burned the village, and returned victorious to the ships with their prisoners, leaving many killed and wounded on the side of the enemy, while on their own not more than one died, and only twenty-two were wounded. They soon arranged for their departure; and the seven Indians from the continent, of whom five were wounded, took a canoe from the island, and with seven prisoners returned to their own country, with a most wonderful story to tell of the power of the white strangers. The mariners set sail for Spain, and arrived there Oct. 15, 1498, after an absence of about nineteen months.

There is some question about the first voyage of Vespucci. The belief that the expedition was commanded by Ojeda is not shared by all; some authorities stating that it was a private enterprise, in which Vespucci bore as great a part as any; while he seems to have been altogether subordinate to Ojeda on the second voyage, when he himself states that that gallant cavalier was the commander. The truth is that one early historian sought to prove that Columbus had been the first European to visit the continent; the above account, drawn from the letter of Vespucci, shows that the voyage was completed only a few months after Columbus set sail on his third voyage, the first when he reached the main land. In this effort, the historian has not hesitated to twist things to his own purpose; and has succeeded in creating some doubt about the details.

However this may be, Ojeda was certainly the leader in the second voyage which Vespucci made, if we are to trust the assertion of Americus himself. The cavalier had a strong friend at court, a relative of his being a close friend of Bishop Fonseca, to whom the management of all affairs connected with the Indies had been entrusted. Fonseca had been a bitter enemy of Columbus, ever since the great discoverer had insisted on having a larger household than Fonseca had thought necessary; and having appealed to the sovereigns, had received a decision against the Bishop. Fonseca was ready to do anything

which might annoy or injure Columbus; and it is supposed that he actually gave to Ojeda the chart which Columbus had submitted to the sovereigns, as showing the nature and extent of his discoveries, and the route which he had taken. This, of course, was a gross breach of faith; for Columbus was especially anxious to keep his course a secret as long as possible; and the chart had been committed to Fonseca's care in his official capacity, with the understanding that he was not to show it unless formally required to do so.

In the short interval between his first and second voyage, Vespucius found time, opportunity and inclination for something quite different from the study of geography. He embarked upon the sea of matrimony, with, as first and only mate, a lady of Seville, of an honorable though not wealthy family. They had been betrothed before the first voyage, but for some reason the wedding was postponed until after his return.

Soon after his marriage, Vespucius visited the court, where he was received with much kindness by the King and by Bishop Fonseca. He was consulted respecting the expedition which was then being prepared, and the accounts of what he had himself seen were listened to with much interest. Ferdinand was gratified to find that others besides Columbus could succeed in discovering and exploring these new lands; and begrudged the Admiral the glory of having shown these others the way. Fonseca was equally pleased to find some one willing and capable to take up the work which he was only too anxious to wrest from the hand of Columbus.

Ojeda had no experience as a mariner, and looked upon the proposed voyage rather as a marauding expedition. He was therefore desirous of securing the assistance of experienced navigators; and in this wish he was fully seconded by the King and his minister. The reputation of Vespucius as a geographer was such as to mark him as the man that was wanted; and he seems to have had some repute as a practical navigator. He was strongly urged to make one of the expedition, but was at first disinclined to leave home so soon after his return; but to his natural inclination for such a journey were added the urgings and entreaties of Ojeda and Fonseca, and the known wishes of the King; and Americus decided to visit the New World again.

It was probably due to the influence of Vespucius that so many of the rich merchants of Seville joined in staking a portion of their fortunes on the success of this expedition. A fleet of four vessels was speedily equipped; and the latter part of the spring of 1499 saw them ready for sea; many of the adventurers who had sailed with Columbus and returned in disgust from Hispaniola having been tempted to enlist in this new enterprise, in which they hoped to achieve the wealth they had vainly sought before.

They set sail from Cadiz May 18, 1499; and spent twenty days in the voyage to the Canaries. Twenty-four days later, having sailed but very little west of south, they saw land; and having given thanks to God, launched

their boats, and endeavored to find a landing-place. The shore, however, was so low, and so densely covered with the evergreen aromatic trees, that they concluded to return to the ships and try some other spot.



NATIVES OF THE AMAZON.

One remarkable thing that they observed in these seas was that at a distance of fifteen leagues, or forty-five miles, from land, they came upon a current of fresh water, from which they filled their casks. The latitude, as stated by Vespuceius in his account of this voyage, does not agree with the supposition that this was the Amazon; though the description of the coast and the volume and strength of the current so far out at sea would lead us to believe that this greatest of rivers must be the stream that he meant. He adds that, as they sailed along the coast, they saw two large rivers, one four leagues wide, running from west to east, the other three leagues wide, running from south to north; and concluded that these must be the cause of that current

of fresh water; yet he says nothing of having entered an arm of the sea, or of having land on either side of the vessels.

Having prepared their boats, and put in provision for four days, with twenty men well armed, they entered the river, and rowed nearly two days, ascending it something more than fifty miles. But the land was as low as at the mouth; and the reconnoitering party, concluding that the ships could not land here, floated down the stream to the fleet again. They raised anchor and set sail, continuing in a southerly direction, and standing off to sea about forty leagues.

They now encountered that great equatorial current which sweeps along the coast of Brazil, dividing into two great streams at Cape St. Roque. This was the northern half into which their vessels came; for he says that it "ran from southeast to northwest; so great was it, and ran so furiously, that we were put into great fear, and were exposed to great peril. The current was so strong, that the strait of Gibraltar and that of the Faro of Messina appeared to us like mere stagnant water in comparison with it. We could scarcely make any headway against it, though we had the wind fresh and fair. Seeing that we made no progress, or but very little, and the danger to which we were exposed, we determined to turn our prows to the northwest."

Before, however, they quit the waters south of the equator, Vespuccius made many endeavors to fix upon that star in the southern heavens which corresponds to the North Star in the other hemisphere. Many a night's sleep he lost, he tells us; but the nights were so bad, and his instruments, quadrant and astrolabe, were so primitive, that he could not distinguish a star which had less than ten degrees of motion around the firmament; so that his ambition to fix upon the South Pole Star was not gratified.

They continued on their northwesterly course until they had passed ten degrees north of the equator, when they again saw land. Arrived at this island—for such it proved to be—they anchored about a mile from the beach, fitted out the boats, and with twenty-two well-armed men, rowed to land. Many of the inhabitants were gathered upon the shore from the time that their ships first came in sight; but as the strangers landed, they took fright, and ran into the woods. It took much exertion to reassure them so that they were willing to return. Fortunately, two of them had been captured on the first landing, and one of these was employed as an envoy. These people, although he says they were of a gentle disposition, are described as cannibals: eating the bodies of those who are killed or taken in war; and Vespuccius adds that the Spaniards saw the heads and bones of those who had been eaten, and that the savages did not attempt to deny this practice.

Sailing along the coast of this island, they came to another village of the same tribe, where they were hospitably received and fed by the inhabitants. From this point they made sail to the Gulf of Paria, and anchored opposite

one of the mouths of the Orinoco. Here there was a large village close to the sea, the inhabitants of which regaled the mariners with three different kinds of wine, and presented them with eleven large pearls, more than a hundred smaller ones, and a small quantity of gold.



ON THE ORINOCO.

They remained here seventeen days, feasting on the fruits and savory acorns with which the place abounded. They then continued their journey along the coast, stopping occasionally to hold intercourse with the natives.

But they soon passed the part of the country where the natives were disposed to be friendly. Vesputius says these more hostile tribes "stood waiting for us with their arms, which were bows and arrows, and with some other arms which they use. When we went to the shore in our boats, they disputed our landing in such a manner that we were obliged to fight with them. At the end of the battle they found that they had the worst of it, for as they were naked, we always made great slaughter. Many times not more than sixteen

of us fought with two thousand of them, and in the end defeated them, killing many, and robbing their houses.

“One day we saw a great number of people, all posted in battle array to prevent our landing, We fitted out twenty-six men well armed, and covered the boats, on account of the arrows that were shot at us, and which always wounded some of us before we landed. After they hindered us as long as they could, we leaped on shore, and fought a hard battle with them. The reason why they had so much courage and made such great exertion against us, was that they did not know what kind of a weapon the sword was, or how it cuts. While thus engaged in combat, so great was the multitude of people who charged upon us, throwing at us such a cloud of arrows, that we could not withstand the assault, and nearly abandoning the hope of life, we turned our backs and ran to the boats. While thus disheartened and flying, one of our sailors, a Portuguese, a man of fifty-five years of age, who had remained to guard the boat, seeing the danger we were in, jumped on shore, and with a loud voice called out to us:—

“Children! turn your faces to your enemies, and God will give you the victory!”

“Throwing himself on his knees, he made a prayer, and then rushed furiously upon the Indians, and we all joined with him, wounded as we were. On that they turned their backs to us, and began to flee, and finally we routed them, and killed a hundred and fifty. We burned their houses, also, at least one hundred and eighty in number. Then, as we were badly wounded and weary, we returned to the ships, and went into a harbor to recruit, where we stayed twenty days, solely that the physician might cure us. All escaped, except one who was wounded in the left breast.”

As they went on, they were obliged to fight with a great many people, he tells us, but always had the victory. No other adventure is detailed until they landed at an island, some fifteen leagues from the land; but he does not state its position more definitely than this. Two remarkable circumstances are stated in regard to the inhabitants of this island, one in each of the two long letters which Vespuccius wrote, describing what he had seen on his voyage. In one letter he says that, seeing no people near the shore, eleven of them landed and walked two leagues inland before they came upon a village. There were twelve houses here, but only seven persons, all of whom were women. There was not one among them, he gravely assures us, who was not a span and a half taller than himself, although he was not below the average height of men. While they were being entertained by these giantesses, and repaying the hospitality by planning to carry off two young girls as a present to the King, thirty-six men entered the town, and came to the house where the strangers were drinking. So tall were they that each upon his knees towered above the tallest of the white men standing. The travelers were not

a little alarmed at the sight of so many giants, evidently strong in proportion to their height; but the huge Indians proved as kindly as their women, and after conversing with the strangers by signs, escorted them back to their ships.

In another letter, he says that the people of this island were the most filthy and bestial that he had ever seen; but at the same time so peaceable that he was able to become acquainted with some of their customs. One of these, which particularly disgusted the fastidious Florentine, is thus described:—

“They all had their cheeks stuffed full of a green herb, which they were continually chewing, as beasts chew the cud, so that they were scarcely able to speak. Each of them wore, hanging at the neck, two dried gourd-shells, one of which was filled with the same kind of herb which they had in their mouths, and the other with a white meal, which appeared to be chalk-dust. They also carried with them a small stick, which they wetted in their mouths from time to time, and then put into the meal, afterwards putting it into the herb, with which both cheeks were filled, and mixing the meal with it. We were surprised at their conduct, and could not understand for what purpose they indulged in the filthy habit.”

Evidently, Vespucius was nothing of a prophet, or he would have foreseen that Europeans and their American descendants would learn to indulge freely in practices just as filthy as that which he so condemns. It is probable, however, that the weed which they chewed was not tobacco, but a species of that plant so much esteemed in the East Indies, and there known as the betel. The dust was calcined oyster shells; and he discovered that the reason for indulging in this habit was found in the lack of fresh water on the island. There were no streams or springs; but the natives were accustomed to collect the dew which fell upon certain large-leaved plants, and allay their thirst with that. As this supply was of course very small, they were driven to chewing these substances to prevent thirst.

They had now been at sea about a year. Their stock of provisions was nearly exhausted, and much of that which remained had been spoiled by the heat. Their ships were sea-worn and leaky, so that the pumps could scarcely keep them free from water. They decided to go to Hispaniola, from which they were, according to the pilots, about three hundred and sixty miles away; there to repair their ships, and allow the sailors some little recreation.

Reaching the only New World settlement of Europeans after a voyage of a week, they remained there for two months, refitting their ships and provisioning them for the voyage of three hundred leagues of ocean which lay between them and Castile. So Vespucius states the distance; but our modern maps show it to have been from two to three times as great.

They were so refreshed by their stay in Hispaniola that they concluded to

make their voyage longer; and cruised for some time among the numberless small islands north of Hayti, discovering more than a thousand. This portion of their voyage was fraught with dangers, on account of the numerous shoals; and more than once they came near being lost. But the provisions which they had procured in Hispaniola began to give out; they were reduced to six ounces of bread and three small measures of water per day for each man; and the ships showed the effects of the long voyage in the torrid zone, even though they had so lately been repaired. The leaders of the expedition therefore concluded to take some slaves, and return to their home.

In accordance with this resolution, two hundred and thirty-two unfortunate natives were torn from their island homes and their pleasant, indolent life, and taken aboard the ships. Sixty-seven days were required for the voyage to the Azores, where they stopped for supplies; and as the winds were contrary when they left these islands, they were obliged to steer southward to the Canaries before they could reach Cadiz.

They arrived at the starting-point June 8, 1500, after an absence of about thirteen months. Of the fifty-seven men who had set out, two had been killed by the Indians; the others returned home. Thirty-two of the captives had died on the voyage; the others were sold. But the merchant-traveler notes that the profits of the voyage, after expenses were paid, were very small; only five hundred ducats being gained, which, divided into fifty-five shares, would give each man a sum equivalent, at the present day, to a little over fifty dollars of United States money.

But this small result, in a pecuniary point of view, did not deter him from desiring to undertake another voyage as soon as preparations could be made; nor did sickness, incurred while in the unhealthful climate of the West Indies, lessen his taste for wandering. He set to work at once to make ready a new fleet, being assisted by some merchants of Seville; and had planned to sail in September of the year 1500, or but three months after his return.

The letters of Vespucci describing the countries which he visited had been widely published; indeed, there is a dispute about the address of one of them which one of his biographers explains by the assertion that copies of it were probably sent to many prominent men of the time, as if it were a special letter to each. His letters were meant to be circulated, and this intention of the writer was carried out by the recipient. He was virtually the fifteenth-century forerunner of the modern newspaper correspondent.

By means of these letters he had gained a wide celebrity. Probably his name was, even at this early day, as closely connected with the idea of the New World as was that of its real discoverer. He had become as well known as Columbus, but had not received those sounding titles and wide-extended rights which Ferdinand and Isabella had granted to Columbus before his great discovery was made.

Such being the reputation of the man, it was no wonder that the attention of the King of Portugal had been directed to him. The Portuguese had never ceased to regret their treatment of Columbus; a nation proud above all things of its maritime discoveries and enterprise, they had seen their achievements far eclipsed by those of a sailor who had first offered his services to their king, and had them rejected. It was useless to try to win him from the service of the King of Spain; for, disgusted at the duplicity of Portugal, he had refused to listen to her before Ferdinand and Isabella had accepted his proposition. But here was a navigator of almost equal renown; he had visited the very countries at which a Portuguese fleet had recently touched; and which, by a new agreement between the two countries, now belonged to Portugal. We quote from another letter of Vespuccius, written after the voyage was accomplished:—

“I was reposing myself in Seville, after the many toils I had undergone in the two voyages made for his Serene Highness Ferdinand, King of Castile, in the Indies, yet indulging a willingness to return to the land of pearls, when fortune, not seeming to be satisfied with my former labors, inspired the mind of his Serene Majesty, Don Emmanuel, King of Portugal—I know not through what circumstances—to attempt to avail himself of my services. There came to me a royal letter from his Majesty, containing a solicitation that I would come to Lisbon and speak with his Highness, he promising to show me many favors. I did not at once determine to go, and argued with the messenger, telling him I was ill, and indisposed for the undertaking, but that when I recovered, if his Highness wished me to serve him, I would do whatever he might command me. .

“Seeing that he could not obtain me, he sent Julianio di Bartolomeo del Giacondo, who at that time resided in Lisbon, with commission to use every possible means to bring me back with him. Julianio came to Seville, and on his arrival, and induced by his urgent entreaties, I was persuaded to go, though my going was looked upon with ill-favor by all who knew me. It was thus regarded by my friends, because I abandoned Castile, where I had been honored, and because they thought that the King had rightful possession of me, and it was considered still worse that I departed without taking leave of my host.

“Having presented myself at the court of King Emmanuel, he appeared to be highly pleased with my coming, and requested that I would accompany his three ships which were ready to set out for the discovery of new lands. Thus, esteeming a request from a king as equivalent to a command, I was obliged to consent to whatever he asked of me.”

There must have been some reason why Vespuccius was so ready to go to Portugal, and to accept the requests of the King as commands; but these cannot now be determined. It is probable, from hints that he gives through-

out his letters, that his prominence had made enemies for him in Spain; perhaps Fonseca, who seems to have been constitutionally jealous of all who succeeded, had indulged in some of his acts of petty tyranny. There was no open quarrel; and whatever hard feeling there may have been was dissipated by time.

Sailing under the authority of the King of Portugal, it was possible for them to take a slightly different course from any that had been followed by Spanish expeditions. The three armed caravels left Lisbon May 13, 1501; and after touching at the Canaries, turned to the south, and ran along the coast of Africa as far as Cape Verde. Here they rested for a while, and then set sail, directing their course "toward the Antarctic Pole."

The wind, however, was easterly, so that their course was not directly south. The voyage was a long and stormy one. From the time that they left Lisbon, they sailed "ninety-seven days, experiencing harsh and cruel fortune. During forty-four days, the heavens were in great commotion, and we had nothing but thunder and lightning and drenching rain. Dark clouds covered the sky, so that by day we could see but little better than we could in ordinary nights, without moonlight. Our nights were of the blackest darkness. The fear of death came over us, and the hope of life almost deserted us. After all these heavy afflictions, at last it pleased God, in his mercy, to have compassion on us and to save our lives. On a sudden, the land appeared in view, and at the sight of it, our courage, which had fallen very low, and our strength, which had become weakness, immediately revived. Thus it usually happens to those who have passed through great affliction, and especially to those who have been preserved from the rage of evil fortune.

"On the seventeenth day of August, in the year 1501, we anchored by the shore of that country, and rendered to the Supreme Being our most sincere thanks, according to the Christian custom, in a solemn celebration of mass.
* * * * * Many other things I would describe, but have studiously avoided mentioning, in order that my work might not become large beyond measure. One thing only I feel that I should not omit: it is that, aided by the goodness of God, in due time, and according to our need, we saw land; for we were not able to sustain ourselves any longer; all our provisions had failed us; our wood, water, biscuit, salt meat, cheese, wine, oil, and, what is more, our vigor of mind, all gone. By God's mercy, therefore, our lives were spared, and to him we ought to render thanks, honor, and glory."

They had reached South America at a point about a hundred and fifty miles south of where they had first touched on the preceding voyage, or about eight degrees south of the equator. Their coasting voyage was prolonged until they had reached a point on the coast of Patagonia, fifty degrees south. But they did not know that this was the same continent as that which they had previously explored; they had been so driven by the storms that, with-

out observations, it was impossible for them to be at all certain of their latitude or longitude; and the weather of course had prevented them from deriving any aid from the heavenly bodies. But the storms were not the only source of danger, as Vespucci tells us:—

“We had arrived at a place which, if I had not possessed some knowledge of cosmography, by the negligence of the pilot would have finished the course of our lives. There was no pilot who knew our situation within fifty leagues, and we went rambling about, and should not have known whither we were going, if I had not provided in season for my own safety and that of my companions, with the astrolabe and quadrant, my astrological instruments. On this occasion I acquired no little glory for myself; so that, from that time forward, I was held in such estimation by my companions as the learned are held in by people of quality. I explained the sea-charts to them, and made them confess that the ordinary pilots were ignorant of cosmography, and knew nothing in comparison with myself.”

The country was thickly inhabited by tribes who proved to be very friendly; and the mariners landed frequently as they journeyed along the coast. Their horror was excited when they learned that these savages went to war and fought with incredible fierceness, for no other reason than that their ancestors were at war with the same tribes, and the death of those who had fallen in battle must be avenged. Most of them, too, were cannibals, he declares: eating not only the bodies of their enemies, but those of their own acquaintance and even kindred.

Yet the magnificence of the vegetation, the stories which the Indians told of gold and jewels, the gorgeous plumage of the birds, the fragrance of the woods, and the strange and varied fruits and grains brought forth in the greatest abundance by the untilled soil, so excited the wondering admiration of the navigator that he exclaims: “If there is a terrestrial paradise in the world, it cannot be far from this region.”

We omit his descriptions of the stars of the southern hemisphere, which he gives, not only in this letter, but in an account which he presented to the King; judging his astronomical discoveries of equal value, at least, with the geographical results of the expedition; nor have we space for his description of the rainbow which he saw at midnight, nor of the new moon seen at mid-day.

Not all the natives, however, proved friendly. At a point five degrees south of the equator—for they had gone north a short distance—they found it impossible to attract the natives to a conference. They accordingly left a number of articles, such as bells, looking-glasses, and similar trifles, on the shore; hoping that the savage inhabitants would see by this that the strangers were well-disposed toward them.

The next morning, they saw from the ships that the Indians were making

bonfires along the coast, and thinking that this was an invitation for them to come ashore, a party of the white men landed. The natives kept at a distance, but made signs that they wished the strangers to go farther inland with them.

This was a serious matter; and the leader was at first not inclined to permit any of them to go; but two of them persuaded him to give his permission for them to make the venture; and left, having strict orders not to be gone more than five days.

Six days passed, while the men in the ships awaited the return of their comrades. Every day, some of the natives came down to the shore, but would hold no communication with the sailors. On the seventh day they landed, resolved to investigate the fate of their comrades. There were many women among the natives gathered on the beach, and they could see that the men were urging them to speak with the newcomers; but all their arguments and commands seemed to be in vain. The Europeans, thinking that perhaps the naked natives were afraid, determined to send one of their own men into their midst; and a very courageous young man volunteered for the duty. In order to encourage the natives the Europeans entered the boats while this one of their number went forward to meet the women, who advanced toward him. When he drew near them, they formed themselves into a great circle about him, touching him and looking at him as with astonishment. While all this was going on, the watchers in the boats saw a woman coming down from the mountain, carrying a large club in her hand. When she arrived where the young man stood, she came up behind him; and raising the bludgeon, struck him such a blow that she laid him dead on the spot. Immediately the other women seized upon his body, and dragged him by the feet away to the mountain.

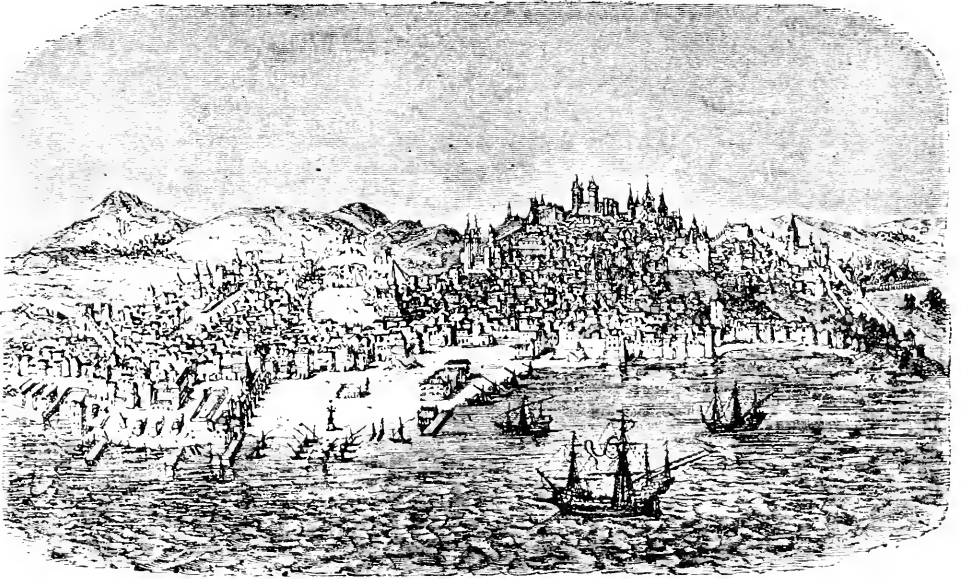
The men then ran down to the shore, and assailed the mariners with their bows and arrows. The boats had grounded; and in the confusion of the moment, the frightened white men did not know where to turn. Terror and panic subsided, however, after a few moments; and they discharged four guns at the savages. The noise frightened them; although the aim was so uncertain that no one was hit; and they fled toward the mountain.

They now had leisure to look toward the point where the women had dragged the body of their victim; and saw that they had cut him to pieces, and were roasting him in sight of his comrades. As each bit of the horrid feast was ready, one of the hags would hold it high up, that the men in the boat might see, and then they would fall to and devour it. The Indian men made signs from a safe distance, that the same fate had befallen the other two, who had accompanied them into the interior.

Their inhuman conduct enraged the whites, and more than forty of them, among whom was Americus, determined to rush on shore and avenge their

slaughtered comrades. But the expedition was under the command of a Portuguese official, whom Vesputius styles the Superior Captain; and he forbade this course. Burning with indignation against the cannibal slayers of their companions, they were obliged to forego the satisfaction of revenge, and sailed away from this part of the coast.

When they had been ten months on the voyage, having found no minerals in the country, although there was an abundance of valuable woods of various kinds, they concluded to take their leave of this coast and try some other part of the ocean. A council was held, composed of all whose skill as navigators might entitle them to express an opinion; and Vesputius was invested with full command of the fleet, to pursue whatever course appeared best to him. He ordered that all the vessels should be provided with wood and water for six months; and being thus provided, gave the signal to sail February 15.



LISBON IN THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY.

By April 3, they had sailed fifteen hundred miles from the port that they had left. On this day began a storm, which was so violent that they were obliged to take in all their sails and run under bare poles. The storm was so furious that all were in great fear; nor did it abate before the seventh of the month. While driven by this storm, they came in sight of new land, and ran within twenty leagues of it; finding the whole coast wild, and seeing neither harbor nor inhabitants, Vesputius attributed the lack of population to the

extreme cold, which was so great that the Europeans could scarcely endure it.

Finding themselves in great danger, and the storm so violent that they could hardly distinguish one ship from on board another, on account of the high seas that were running and the misty darkness of the weather, they agreed that signals should be made to turn the fleet about, and that they should leave the country, and steer for Portugal.

They took the wind aft, and during that night and the next day the storm increased so much that they were very apprehensive for their safety, and made many vows of pilgrimage and the performance of other ceremonies usual with Catholic mariners under such circumstances.

They did not intend to sail straight for Portugal, but first to touch at some African port. Winds and currents brought them to Sierra Leone, where they stayed fifteen days, obtaining supplies of food and other necessities, before they steered for the Azores. They arrived at these islands the latter part of July, and remained another fortnight; when they left for Lisbon. One of their vessels had been burned as unseaworthy at Sierra Leone, so that it was only two ships which entered Portuguese waters September 7, 1502, after a voyage of about fifteen months.

The adventurers were received with much joy in Lisbon; and Americus, especially, was singled out for distinction by the King. His ship had become unseaworthy, but it was broken up with much ceremony, and portions of it carried in solemn procession to a church, where they were suspended as sacred relics. Nor were the rejoicings confined to Portugal. Florence received the accounts of the discoveries of her illustrious son with much pride, and honors were bestowed upon those members of his family who still lived in the city on the Arno.

The reputation of Americus rested not only on the account which he had given of new countries, but upon his astronomical discoveries as well. He was confessedly far in advance of most other learned men of the age in the sciences of astronomy and geometry; and although his calculations are undoubtedly defective in many points, yet they agree more nearly with those of the present day than do those of any of his contemporaries. He was the discoverer of the method of obtaining longitude at sea, by observing the conjunction of the moon with one of the planets; his observation and enumeration of the stars in the southern heavens were of great value to mariners who came after him; and thus his many sleepless nights were not without benefit to mankind.

Believing that Americus would have reached India by the way of the southwest, had not his last voyage been interrupted by the severe storms which he had encountered, the King of Portugal lost no time in fitting out another expedition. Six vessels were prepared, and Gonzalo Coelho appointed to the



SHIPWRECKED.

chief command of the fleet. Americus was placed in command of one of the vessels, and was recognized as the scientific authority of the squadron.

Their destination was the "Island Malaca," which was thought to be "the warehouse of all the ships which come from the Sea of Ganges and the Indian Ocean, as Cadiz is the storehouse for all the ships that pass from east to west and from west to east by the way of Calcutta." This island is described as being situated farther east and much farther south than Calcutta, being about the third degree of north latitude; it is impossible to determine, from the accounts given by Vespuccius, whether the peninsula of this name was then supposed to be an island, or whether the name which is now applied to the main land was then given to the island of Sumatra; both answer the description, as to location, equally well.

May 10, 1503, they set sail from Portugal; making up their cargo at the Cape Verde Islands. But let Vespuccius tell the story of the voyage, in the letter which he addressed after his return to his old school-fellow, Piero Soderini:—

"Our Superior Captain was a presumptuous and very obstinate man. He would insist upon going to reconnoiter Sierra Leone, a southern country of Ethiopia, without there being any necessity for it, unless to exhibit himself as the captain of six vessels. He acted contrary to the wish of all our other captains in pursuing this course. Sailing in this direction, when we arrived off the coast of this country, we had such bad weather, that though we remained in sight of the coast four days, it did not permit us to attempt a landing. We were compelled at length to leave the country, sailing from there to the south, and bearing southwest.

"When we had sailed three hundred leagues through the Great Sea, being then three degrees south of the equinoctial line, land was discovered, which might have been about twenty-two leagues distant from us, and which we found to be an island in the midst of the sea. We were filled with wonder at beholding it, considering it a natural curiosity, as it was very high, and not more than two leagues in length and one in width. This island was not inhabited by any people, and was an evil island for the whole fleet; because, as your Excellency will learn, by the evil counsel and bad management of the Superior Captain, he lost his ship here. He ran her upon a rock, and she split open and went to the bottom, on the night of St. Lorenzo, which is the tenth of August, and nothing was saved from her except the crew. She was a ship of three hundred tons, and carried everything of most importance in the fleet.

"As the whole fleet was compelled to labor for the common benefit, the Captain ordered me to go with my ship to the aforesaid island and look for a good harbor, where all the ships might anchor. As my boat, filled with nine of my mariners, was of service, and helped to keep up a communication between the ships, he did not wish me to take it, telling me they would bring it

to me at the island. So I left the fleet, as he ordered me, without a boat, and with less than half my men, and went to the said island, about four leagues distant. There I found a good harbor, where all the ships might have anchored in perfect safety. I waited for the captain and fleet full eight days, but they never came; so that we were very much dissatisfied, and the people who remained with me in the ship were in great fear, so that I could not console them. On the eighth day we saw a ship coming off at sea, and for fear those on board might not see us, we raised anchor and went toward it, thinking they might bring me my boat and men. When we arrived alongside, after the usual salutations, they told us that the Captain had gone to the bottom, that the crew had been saved, and that my boat and men remained with the fleet, which had gone further to sea. This was a very serious grievance to us, as your Excellency may well think. It was no trifle to find ourselves three hundred leagues distant from Lisbon, in mid-ocean, with so few men.

“However, we bore up under adverse fortune, and returning to the island, supplied ourselves with wood and water with the boat of my consort. * * * Having taken in our supplies, we departed for the southwest, as we had an order from the King, that if any vessel of the fleet, or its captain, should be lost, I should make for the land of my last voyage. We discovered a harbor which we called the Bay of All Saints [it still retains the name], and it pleased God to give us such good weather that in seventeen days we arrived at it. It was distant three hundred leagues from the island we had left, and we found neither our captain nor any other ship of the fleet in the course of the voyage. We waited full two months and four days in this harbor, and seeing that no orders came for us, we agreed, my consort and myself, to run along the coast.

“We sailed two hundred and sixty leagues further, and arrived at a harbor where we determined to build a fortress. This we accomplished, and left in it the twenty-four men that my consort had received from the captain’s ship that was lost.

“In this port we stayed five months, building the fort and loading our ships with dye-wood. We could not proceed farther for lack of men, and besides, I was destitute of many equipments. Thus, having finished our labors, we determined to return to Portugal, leaving the twenty-four men in the fortress, with provisions for six months, with twelve pieces of cannon, and many other arms. We made peace with all the people of the country, who have not been mentioned in this voyage, but not because we did not see and treat with a great number of them. As many as thirty men of us went forty leagues inland. * * * All this being performed, we bade farewell to the Christians we left behind us, and to the country, and commenced our navigation on a north-north-east course, with the intention of sailing directly to the city of Lisbon. In seventy-seven days, after many toils and dangers, we entered

this port on the eighteenth day of June, 1504, for which God be praised. We were well received, although altogether unexpected; as the whole city had given us up for lost. All the other ships of the fleet had been lost through the pride and folly of our commander, and thus it is that God rewards haughtiness and vanity."

Thus ended the last voyage of Americus Vespuccius. Wishing for repose, and perhaps disheartened by the unfortunate result of this cruise, he abandoned the idea of again going to sea, and devoted himself to writing the account of what he had already accomplished. This was to be the end of his active service, he thought at the time; although he was younger by four years than Columbus had been when the great Admiral set sail on his first voyage to the unknown west.

He remained in Portugal but a few months after the return of his ship; perhaps he was not received with such distinction as when he had brought home glowing accounts of new lands; perhaps the King regretted the loss of his four mighty ships, and thought that the disasters might have been averted, had these survivors acted differently; perhaps he was only desirous of visiting again that country where he had lived for some years, and which was the home of his wife's family. Whatever may have been the cause, we find him in Seville again in the latter part of 1504; and in February, 1505, acting as messenger for Columbus, who was prostrated by illness at Seville and desirous of laying his case before the sovereigns at Segovia.

The death of Isabella had taken place about the time that Americus returned to Spain. This was the greatest calamity which could have befallen Columbus; but historians suppose that it was of great advantage to Vespuccius. The Italian biographers of the great astronomer and cosmographer suppose that he was more of a favorite with the King than with the Queen; and one Spanish historian inclines to the opinion that King Ferdinand sent for him, that he might be informed of the plans and projects of the Portuguese government, both in regard to their expeditions to the shores of the New World, and the progress which they were making in their voyages and establishments in the East Indies.

His sudden departure from Spain and entering into the service of a rival nation was not noticed; or at least was not made the pretext for any coldness on the part of the King; for Ferdinand wished to use him. On April 11, 1505, a royal grant of twelve thousand maravedis was made him; and on the 24th of the same month, letters of naturalization on his behalf were issued, in consideration of his fidelity and his many services to the Crown.

Preparations were at once begun for a new expedition, of which Vespuccius and Vicente Nanez Pinzon were to be the commanders. Vespuccius had by this time reconsidered his determination of remaining on shore and writing the accounts of his former voyages; the old spirit of adventure and discovery

was again aroused in him; and he busied himself at Palos, consulting with his colleague and making every possible preparation for the voyage.

But since he was under royal patronage, and the ships were provided and equipped out of the royal treasury, he was dependent, to a considerable extent, upon official activity; and the state of the country at that time made the officials very anxious to act as little as possible, lest they might offend one of their two masters.

The late Queen had willed her dominions to her daughter Juana and her husband Philip. Should Juana be absent or incapacitated—for she was subject to fits of insanity—King Ferdinand was to act as regent for the little prince, Charles, the son of Juana, who afterward became the great Emperor, Charles V.

Ferdinand was so unpopular in Castile that, as soon as Philip and Juana arrived from Flanders, where they had been at the death of the Queen, he was obliged to resign his authority to them, and retire to his own kingdom of Arragon. An entire change took place in nearly all the departments of the government; and those officers who remained in their old positions found it very difficult to do anything which would not displease either King Ferdinand or King Philip, or perhaps both.

Such was the position in which the officers who had charge of the preparations for this expedition were placed. Their perplexities were suddenly ended by the death of Philip, barely two months after the arrival of the royal couple in Spain. Castile now seemed likely to suffer as much from the lack of rulers as she had lately suffered from having too many; for the Queen was insane, and her father, King Ferdinand, was in Naples, attending to the affairs of that kingdom. The country was on the verge of anarchy; and, naturally enough, the officials declined to take active steps to prepare for this expedition.

King Ferdinand returned, and sent for Vesputius and Juan de la Cosa, an experienced navigator of high repute, to come to court. They were soon engaged in consultation with the King and his ministers regarding the nautical affairs of the kingdom. The vessels which had been prepared for the voyage of discovery had been dispatched on other errands before the King's return; and the idea of the expedition seems to have been given up. The work which had been assigned to the two navigators above mentioned was of a different sort; Cosa was to take command of two caravels, which were to be fitted out and armed as convoys to vessels coming and going between Spain and the settlement in Hispaniola; for Ferdinand was afraid of the neighboring country of Portugal, and anticipated some effort to interfere with his commerce. Americus was charged with the provisioning and support of these vessels, and Pinzon was to attend to providing arms and military stores.

Shortly after this arrangement was made, Vesputius was formally appoint-

ed to the position of Chief Pilot, with a salary of seventy-five thousand maravedis a year, or about seven hundred dollars of United States money, according to present values. This high and responsible post, with many duties attached, was held by Americus for the rest of his life, and shows clearly how highly he was esteemed by the cold and wary Ferdinand.

This office did not require his unremitting attention, however; for shortly after his appointment he visited his native city. It was during this voyage that Bronzino painted the portrait from which all engravings are copied.

When he returned to Spain we have no record; but in all probability the visit to Florence was a comparatively short one. The next four years are filled up with his official duties, as showed by the entries in the Spanish archives; but of the life of the man during these years we know nothing—only the acts of the official. Whether the flame of life sank gradually, for lack of fuel, or was quenched suddenly, as by a flood of water, we know not; all that is told us is found in the warrant appointing his successor; and this states that Amerigo Vespucci had died February 22, 1512.

His wife survived him for many years. They had no children, but Americus had long cared for one of his nephews as for a child of his own. From this nephew are descended the present representatives of the great explorer; for the Vespucci, though reduced from their former wealth to poverty, still live in Florence.

The astronomical discoveries of Vespucci would never have made his name known except to scientists and seamen, and his explorations of the coast of the western continent would excite comparatively little interest, were it not for the fact that his name has become indissolubly connected with the New World; for, valuable as was the information which he brought home, he was but one of the many who visited the continent discovered at the close of the fifteenth century; and the astronomical achievements were of far more moment than the geographical knowledge obtained. But from him the vast New World derived its name.

It is often said that Vespucci robbed Columbus of his honors, and that the New World should have been called Columbia. Had the discoverer thought so, it would have been easy enough for him to have bestowed his own name upon the island which he called Hispaniola, or upon that larger island which he always thought was a portion of the continent, and which has retained its native name, Cuba. Columbus himself appears to have felt no jealousy of Vespucci, on this or any other account; but they were good friends after the voyagings of both had been completed.

Americus, then, did not offensively claim the honor of having discovered this country; nor was he, in all probability, the first to give his name to it. It was a custom then, and has been the custom ever since, to call newly discovered bodies of land or water after the actual discoverer, or those who

made his journey possible, or the land from which he came. To illustrate by the continent which we know best, the map of North America, from Hudson's Bay to Cape Robert Lincoln, is dotted with names so given.

There seems to have been no effort to give a collective name to the New World for many years after its discovery; indeed, it was so long supposed to be a part of Asia that it was unnecessary. A Latin book on cosmography, however, printed at Strasburg in 1509, the work of an Italian named Ilacomo, suggests that as this country was discovered by Americus, it should be called America.

Vespucius has been accused of trying to show that he discovered the main land before Columbus saw it; and, for this purpose, fabricating the account of the first voyage out of what he learned on the second. That is, he took but three voyages, the first setting out in 1499; and after this was over, he proceeded to write the account of four, pretending that he sailed first in 1497, and again in 1499. The points of similarity between the two give some color to this theory; but we cannot understand how, if this had been the case, he should still have been regarded as a friend by Columbus, who cared but little for the material advancement which he had gained, but was only solicitous for the honor and the glory which were justly his. If Vespucius had thus falsified the history of his life, with a view to depriving Columbus of some honor, the Admiral must have heard of it; and would not have employed him as a messenger in his suit, or have spoken of him with respect and affection.

The name America, in accordance with the custom which still obtains among geographers, was first applied, naturally enough, to the coast which Americus explored and described. But a portion of this coast was the source from which valuable dye-woods were derived, especially a kind which was called brazil, from the Portuguese word *brazza*, meaning a live coal, or glowing fire; and the names America and Brazil were both used to denote the same coast. After a while, the second of these names was confined to a certain part of the coast, where the wood was actually obtained; while the other name was applied to the part north and that south of it. From this, it was but a short step to speaking of all that great southern peninsula as America; and gradually the name came to be applied to the whole western continent.

Not in the life-time of the great Vespucius, however, was it so used. As late as 1550, North America was called Terra Florida on the Spanish maps, while America and Brazil were two names given to the same coast. A writer in the *North American Review*, more than seventy years ago, thus comments upon the changes which the application of the name has undergone:—

“The fortune of the name of America itself is not a little singular, as an instance of the mutations of human affairs; which, having been first given to a single province, next spread over the whole southern continent, then passed on to the modern, and now, from being the appellation of the whole New

World, it seems about to be confined, by foreign nations at least, to our own youthful and aspiring republic."

Americus Vespucius sleeps in an unknown grave; but his epitaph is the name of a double continent. It is worthy of note that both the man who first discovered America by landing upon one of its outlying islands, and the one who later had the honor to be the earliest white man to tread the mainland of South America, were alike noble in character and aims.



INDIANS TRACKING FUGITIVES AT NIGHT THROUGH THE FOREST.

CHAPTER VII.

SEBASTIAN CABOT, THE DISCOVERER OF NORTH AMERICA.

John Cabot—Settles in England—His Sons—Residence in Venice—Return to England—The Cabot Boys' Interest in Columbus—Henry VII—John Cabot Goes to Court—A Patent Granted—Expedition Sails from England—Touches at Iceland—Nova Scotia Discovered—The Sailors Insist on Returning—A Second Venture—Death of John Cabot—A Colony Proposed—Mutinous Sailors—Exploration—A King's Injustice—In Spain—Henry VIII.—Sebastian Cabot Summoned to England—To Spain Again—Grand Pilot—A Disappointment—Return to England—Voyage to America—Rebellious Followers—Summoned to Spain Again—Importance of the Moluccas—An Expedition Thither—Sealed Orders—Fault-Finding—Swift Retribution—La Plata—A Fort Built—Ascending the River—A Bloody Battle—Tracked Across the Ocean—A Polite Refusal—Pursued up the River—Cabot Defends Himself—Explorations—Innocent and Guilty Confused—The Fort Stormed—Return to Spain—Cabot's Reputation—Return to England—Grand Pilot of England—Variation of the Needle Explained by Cabot—Proposed Expedition to the Northeast—The Stilyard—Sir Hugh Willoughby—Chancellor's Success—Willoughby's Death—Cabot's Commercial Importance—Accession and Marriage of Queen Mary—Cabot Resigns His Pension—A Lively Old Man—Pension Renewed—Worthington's Unfaithfulness—Death of Cabot.

THE conflict known in English History as the Wars of the Roses lasted, with considerable intermissions, for thirty years, or from 1455 to 1485. During one of these intermissions, probably early in the reign of Edward IV, who came to the throne in 1461, a Venetian navigator, named John Cabot, settled at Bristol, England. It is probable that he was attracted to that country by the reports of the extravagance and luxury of the King; for the Venetians of that time were thrifty merchants.

At Bristol, in the year 1476 or 1477, a son was born to this foreign merchant, to whom the name of Sebastian was given. He was the second son, his elder brother being named Lewis; and another child, also a boy, was born to John Cabot and his wife, who was called Santius.

This removal did not interfere with the education of the three boys; for they received their instruction mainly from their father, who possessed considerable skill in mathematics. As soon as they were old enough, they received a thorough training in arithmetic, geography, and cosmography—the three branches of knowledge most essential to a seaman; and they acquired, while still very young, a considerable skill in practical navigation.

This residence in Venice gave rise to the belief that Sebastian Cabot was a Venetian by birth, as his father undoubtedly was; but when he had acquired a sufficient degree of celebrity to make such particulars interesting, he was

asked about it; and the answer is thus recorded by one of the earliest historians of America, Richard Eden:—

“Sebastian Cabote tould me that he was borne in Bristowe, and that at foure yeare ould he was carried with his father to Venice, and so returned agayne into England with his father, after certain yeares, whereby he was thought to have been borne in Venice.”

While he was still a boy, his return to England took place; but we have no record of the year. He was certainly in England when Columbus returned from his first voyage, and set all Europe afire with interest in his discoveries. At that time the Wars of the Roses had ended; the King recognized by one faction was on the throne, and his wife was the heiress of the rival line. Eighty princes of the blood had fallen in battle during this dreadful war, and a proportionate number of nobles; so that there were but few to resist the rule of Henry VII., had they been so inclined. This prudent ruler had declined to engage in any wars with his neighbors, probably feeling that the country had had enough of that kind of thing; and he was anxious to extend his dominions, and increase his revenue, by any other means which might present themselves.

To the people of England, who were as sick of war as their King, but who, like him, were anxious to “hear some new thing,” the tidings of the success of Columbus brought great excitement. Particularly, we may suppose, were the three Cabot boys interested. Columbus was, like their father, a seaman; like their father, an Italian; and if he had only succeeded in making his appeal, by his brother Bartholomew, to the court of England before his offers were accepted by the sovereigns of Spain, who knows but what their father might have been captain of one of his vessels? Who knows but what he might have taken his three sons, skilled sailors as the boys were, with him?

Such were the thoughts that doubtless kindled the enthusiasm of the young Cabots, and such questions they doubtless asked each other, as they talked over the most astonishing news of the year. Of the year, we say; for there were no nine days’ wonders then; a piece of news was worn threadbare by discussion in all possible lights and circumstances, before another came to replace it.

Nor was John Cabot less enthusiastic than his sons; but his thoughts turned rather to what might be than to what might have been. Where one daring Italian had ventured, another might go; and a western route to the Indies from England might be found as readily as the same thing from Spain. Doubtless, this native of the City of the Sea loved the salt water; for he tells us: “By this fame and report, there increased in my heart a great flame of desire to attempt some notable thing;” and he seems to have turned naturally to the ocean as the avenue to success.

Henry VII., learned that Columbus had once had an idea of applying to him

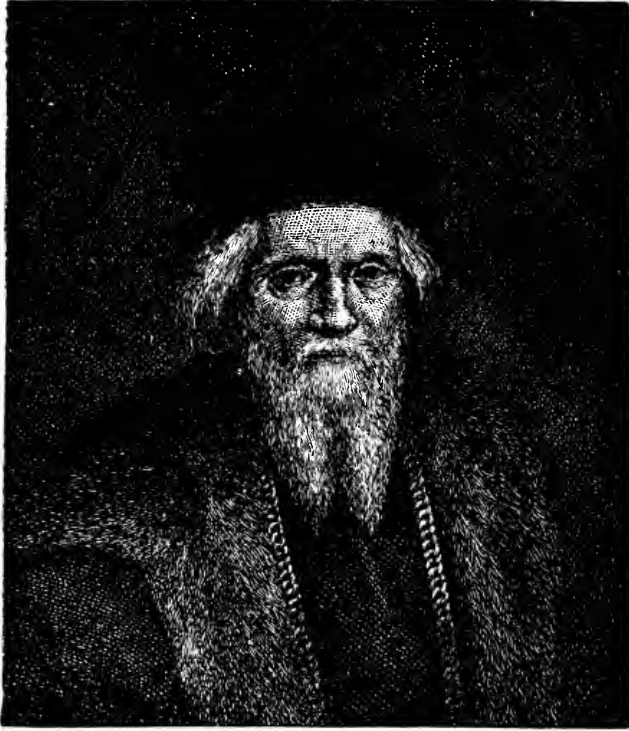
for patronage, had endeavored to secure his services after his success had been demonstrated. But Columbus was faithful to the spirit of the contract which he had made with Ferdinand and Isabella; he had accepted their aid, he had been loaded with honors by them, and he would enter into the service of no other prince. But Henry VII., who loved money very well, desired to have a share in the riches of the Indies, and was not content to give it up in this way. He looked about for another navigator less eminent, but still capable of conducting such an enterprise. While he was searching for such a man, he learned that a certain merchant of Bristol was an enthusiast on the subject of the Columbian discoveries. This was John Cabot, who was exceedingly anxious to follow the example of the great discoverer, and find a northwest passage to India. The King sent for him; he found that, like Columbus, he was not willing to embark in such an enterprise without being under the special patronage of some government, as the results would be so great that no private individual could successfully manage the affairs without exciting jealousy of governments. Unlike Columbus, Cabot was amply supplied with this world's goods, and was well able, if the patronage of the King could be secured, to fit out his own armament. This suited the King exactly; for while he lost no opportunity of getting money, and even went to the verge of tyranny by reviving forgotten laws regarding the collection of taxes, he hated to pay any of it out, especially for an uncertainty, such as this enterprise must be.

March 5, 1496, a patent was granted to John Cabot and his three sons, Lewis, Sebastian, and Santius, authorizing them, their heirs, or deputies, "to sail to all parts, countries, and seas of the East, of the West, and of the North, under our banners and ensigns, with five ships, of what burden or quantity soever they be, and as many mariners or men as they will have with them in the said ships, upon their own proper costs or charges, to seek out, discover, and find whatsoever isles, countries, regions, or provinces of the heathen and infidels, whatsoever they may be, and in what part of the world soever they be, which before this time have been unknown to all Christians."

Under this charter, Cabot was empowered to set up the royal banner, and take possession of the territories discovered by them, as the King's vassals. They were required, on their return, to land at Bristol, no other port being permitted to them; and while they were to have the exclusive right to resort to the lands discovered, and trade there, the Crown was to receive a fifth part of the proceeds of such commerce.

But John Cabot was not the principal person concerned in this charter. Late researches have made it appear that he was only chosen as the one whose name came first in the grant, because he was a well-known and responsible man. He was anxious that a shorter route to the Indies should be discovered, for he was a merchant, and much of his business was connected with the In-

dian trade; but as far as discovery was concerned, he cared far less than his second son; and he naturally felt little or no interest in extending the dominions of the King of England; for although he had lived there so many years, he is described in the charter as a "citizen of Venice."



SEBASTIAN CABOT.

Sebastian Cabot was at this time but twenty or twenty-one; but it was at his instance that his father had gone to court and accepted the proposition of the King. He it was who was most, of all the family, enflamed with the desire of discovery; and he is the one who is justly dignified with the title of Discoverer of North America.

The world moved more slowly in the fifteenth century than it does in the last years of the nineteenth; and it was thought a wonderfully expeditious piece of work, when the five ships were ready to sail about a year after the patent had been granted. In the spring of 1497 they sailed from Bristol, their first landing-place intended being on the coast of Iceland.

A flourishing trade had already been established between Bristol and Iceland, so that this part of the voyage was through well-known waters. In this Cabot had much the advantage of Columbus; for although the Azores

lay farther west than Iceland, these islands were regarded by the navigators of Southern Europe as the extreme western land; while the daring Scandinavian sailors who had settled in Iceland knew of settlements which men of their race had established in Greenland, five hundred years before; and with these two stepping-stones, Iceland and Greenland, the Atlantic does not seem such a boundless extent of water.

It was supposed by Cabot that the land discovered by Columbus was—as indeed he and all other persons believed—islands fringing the coast of Asia. They thought that whatever land there might be to the south, there must be an open channel to the south of Greenland, by which the coast of Asia could be reached; and this was the passage which they sought.

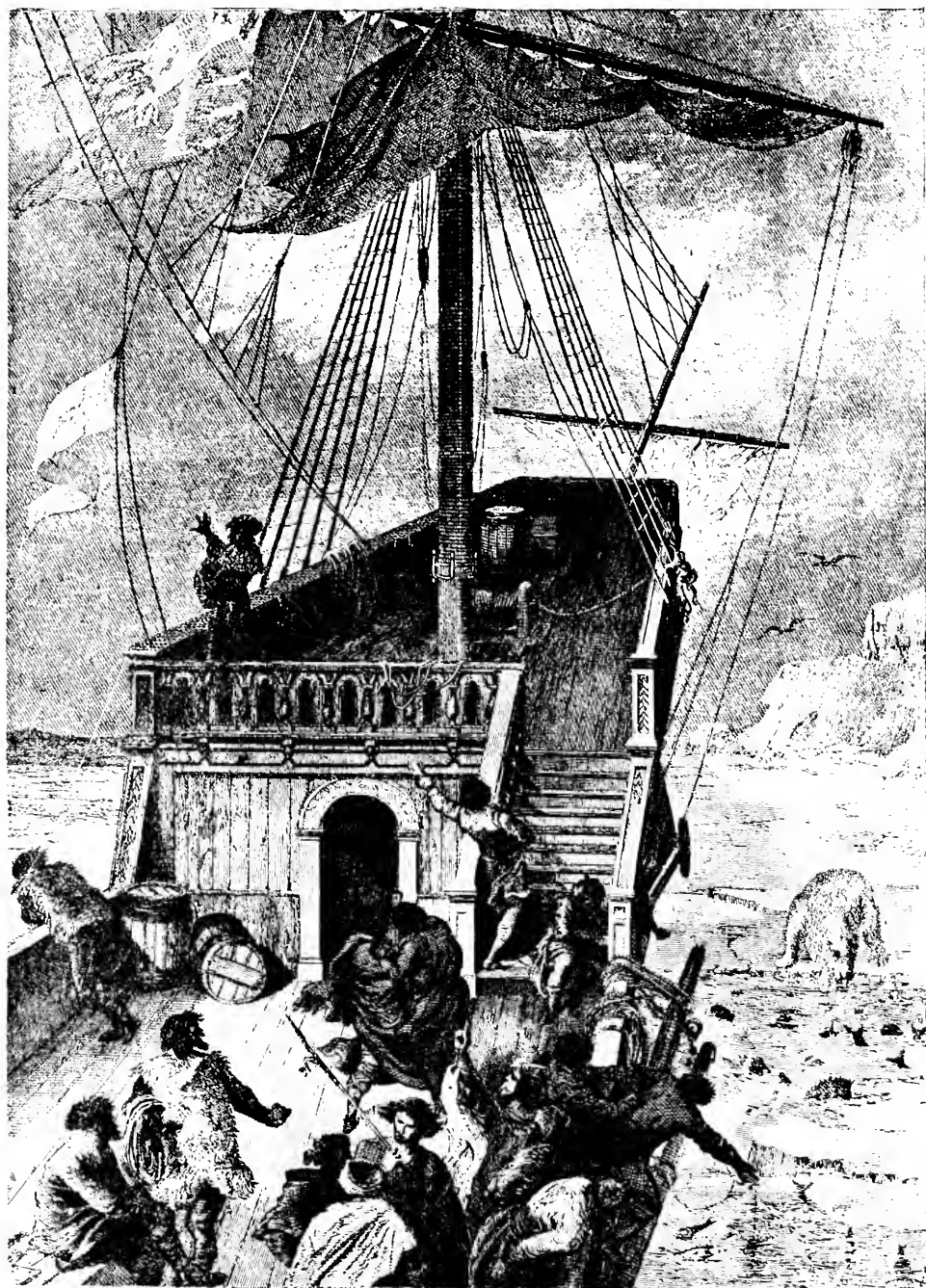
Sometime was spent in Iceland before they steered to the southwest; they were not intending to visit Greenland, for terrible pestilences had swept over that cold and barren land and carried off all but a few miserable remnants of the inhabitants, who had been glad to escape to a milder country.

Through the long summer days they sailed across the ocean, not meeting with any adventure worthy of note; for the sea was as calm as the most timid sailor could wish. At five o'clock on the morning of June 24, the sailors were startled by the cry of "Land!" They had not expected it so soon; for, according to Cabot's calculations, they were still at a considerable distance from the coast of Asia, and did not suppose that there were any islands so far north. At first, he supposed it only a small island, and sought to ascertain its extent by coasting around it.

As he approached it, he found himself in a passage between two bodies of land, both of which were evidently of considerable extent. One of these he named *Terra Primum Visa*, "Land First Seen;" the other, an island of smaller extent—for he still clung to the belief that the first was an island—he named after St. John, because it was on the feast of that saint that it had been discovered.

His efforts to circumnavigate this supposed island proved unsuccessful; for it was nothing more or less than a portion of the American Continent, the peninsula now known as Nova Scotia. The island which he called St. John's was that now named Prince Edward's. He thus writes of his disappointment: "After certayne dayes, I found that the land ranne towards the north, which was to mee a greate displeasure." Such were the feelings of the man who first discovered North America, when he found that it was not a small island at which he had touched.

Cabot's followers were full of wonder at the result which had been attained, and were all for chasing the white bears and the great stags, greater than those of England, with which the country seemed to abound; but the navigator, young as he was, was too determined and persistent in his disposition to be thus allured from what he had undertaken. He steadily followed the



CABOT AT LABRADOR.

coast northward, hoping to find that passage of which he was in search. How far he went, is uncertain; in the map which he published nearly fifty years afterward, there is nothing laid down above the sixtieth parallel; but it is possible that he reached a point three or four degrees north of this.

Some of Cabot's biographers have supposed that he entered Hudson's Bay; but of this there is no certain proof. It is true that he came to a point where the direction of the coast, for some distance, was generally westward, and that he sailed with much exultation into the extensive sheet of water, which he believed to be the ocean that skirted the newly discovered continent on the north, and the passage to India which he wished to find. Ungava Bay would answer the description given, and would fall within the limits of the map drawn by him so many years afterward.

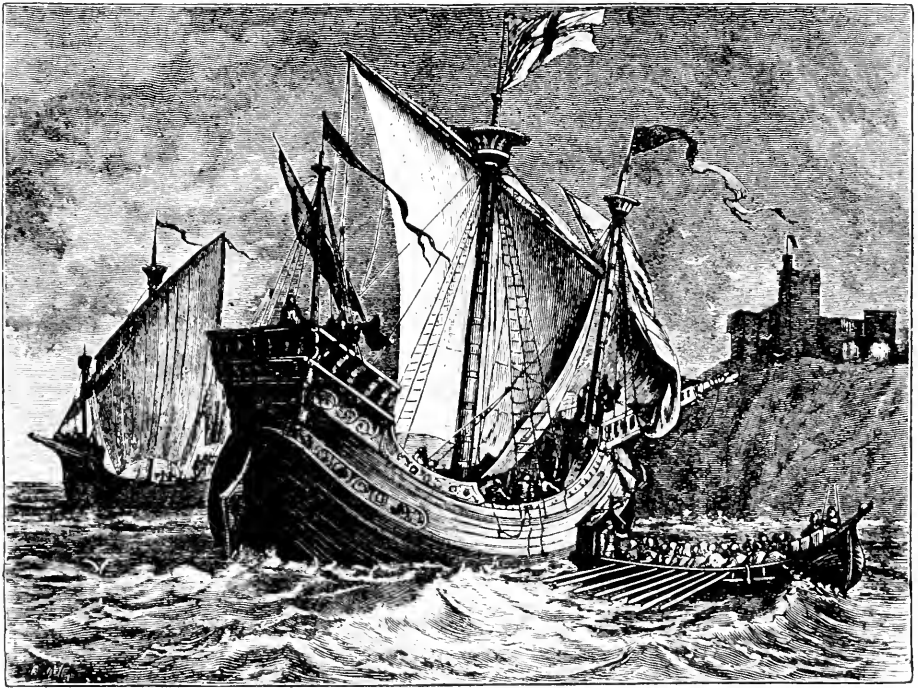
The early navigator was at the mercy of his sailors; when they chose to assert themselves, what leader could hold out against them? Columbus did so, but probably only for a few days after they were really determined to take things in their own hands; but Columbus was a mariner of tried ability; and had demonstrated to his crews that he was skilled above all the pilots on board. Sebastian Cabot was but a youth; and his father, to whose experience more deference might have been paid, had he been actually in command, seems to have gone with his son only to give occasional advice, and to superintend any arrangements that might have to be made about trading with the countries of the East, when they should be reached.

The sailors were tired of the long voyage; they were fearful that new and unsurmountable dangers awaited them if they went farther; they knew that their provisions were nearly exhausted, and they saw no prospect of obtaining any more on these cold and inhospitable shores; they urged an immediate return. Cabot had lost no enthusiasm, and was as eager in his desire to press forward as when he left Bristol; but the sailors had lost confidence, and insisted on returning. He argued, coaxed, and commanded; but with the same result. He was compelled to put his ships about, return to the point where they had first seen land, and, nearly in the track by which they had come, make his way to Bristol again.

Cabot's discovery was not received with anything like the warmth which its importance warranted. Almost the only indication which we have of the time of his return is found in an entry in the Privy Purse expenditures of King Henry VII.: "10th August, 1497. To him that found the New Isle, £10." Thus the discoverer of North America and the author of "Paradise Lost" were rewarded by exactly the same amount of money for that which rendered them famous.

But Cabot was not content to rest upon his laurels; perhaps they were as yet too few to afford a soft bed. Perhaps, too, his expenditures in the first voyage had been such that he was anxious to get some return for them; and

this could only be done by a trading venture with the inhabitants of the New Isle, as we have seen that it was then called. Accordingly, he applied for permission to undertake another voyage; and a second patent was issued, in his father's name as before. This patent, which was dated Feb. 3, 1498, allowed the Cabot's "six English shippes, so that and if the said shippes be of the bourdeyn of two hundred tonnes or under, with their appareil requisite and necessarie for the safe conduct of the said shippes." The Cabots were authorized to "them convey and lede to the lande and isles of late found by the said John in oure name and by oure commandment." The use of the expression "land and isles" shows that the King was fully aware that the continent had been discovered; so that we cannot excuse the meagerness of Sebastian Cabot's reward by supposing the thrifty Tudor to be ignorant of the extent of his services.



CABOT'S RETURN TO ENGLAND.

Yet the King, in the fitting out of this second expedition, showed himself more liberal than he had been on the previous occasion. He could well afford to venture something now, for the results were, to some degree, assured; land was known to exist at a certain distance, reached without great difficulty or danger, by English ships; and returns of some sort might be confidently expected.

What the King really contributed to fitting out this expedition, does not appear; probably one, or at the most, two ships, and a considerable amount of money. "Divers merchants of London also adventured small stocks," reasonably assured that some gain might be expected; and some mercantile adventurers exerted themselves to freight several small vessels, which were to accompany the fleet under the command of the Cabots.

Before this was ready to sail, however, John Cabot died. It shows that he was but the figurehead, when we learn that preparations were in no way interrupted or delayed by his death; but that his son Sebastian stepped calmly to the front, and became the acknowledged, as he had always been the actual, head of the expedition.

Had we such a record of the voyages of Cabot as we have of those made by Vespuccius, the discoverer of South America, the story would doubtless be full of interest. But Cabot lacked that enterprise which led Vespuccius to put himself forward as the learned cosmographer who, by voyages to unknown lands, had vastly advanced the knowledge of the world; the Florentine wrote descriptions of his voyages and the strange countries which he reached, and addressed copies of these so-called letters to all the prominent men whom he thought likely to be interested; the Venetian merchant's son sharing something of the cold pride of the island people among whom he was born, entrusted to the keeping of a few hastily written pages the results of his adventures; these were left by him at his death, nearly ready for publication; but by some carelessness they were lost.

It is only the bare outlines, then, of his adventures upon this voyage which can be given. Besides the hands required to man the vessels, he took with him three hundred men, with a view of establishing a colony on the coast which he had discovered. It will be remembered that his knowledge of the coast between Nova Scotia and the entrance of Hudson's Strait was acquired in a very few weeks beginning with the 24th of June; probably not more than two or three weeks. At this season of the year there would be few indications of the severity of the winter, and knowing that this territory corresponded, in distance from the equator, with that part of Europe which is included between the parallels just north of Spain and of Scotland, he would not expect any great difficulties from the climate. He landed his three hundred colonists on the coast of Labrador, and having instructed them to explore the country so as to find the best possible location for a colony, he sailed on in search of the Northwest Passage.

He followed the coast as far as sixty-seven and one-half degrees north, probably passing into Hudson's Bay; although this, as in the first voyage, is by no means certain. He might have crossed, from island to island, at the inner end of the strait; having no idea of the vast inland sea on the verge of which he was sailing. It is not reasonable to suppose that, had he actually

reached the bay, he would have returned without thorough investigation: since the great extent of this body of water would naturally lead him to suppose that he had found an open sea north of the continent.

Meanwhile, the proposed colony on the coast of Labrador was not progressing. Although it was the midst of summer, and "the dayes were very longe, and in manner without nyght," the settlers found it too cold for comfort; they had no shelter but their tents, and only the provisions which had been left them from the ship's stores. They missed the comforts of civilized life—such as Englishmen of the latter part of the fifteenth century knew anything about—and longed only to return to their own country. They were very far from being such stuff as heroes are made of.

They made a few spasmodic efforts to explore the country, as the young commander had directed; but nothing of any consequence in this way was achieved. The number was lessened by daily deaths; so that when Cabot returned, disappointed at not having found any open passage to the west, he received new set-backs to his enthusiasm from the colonists. They had taken no steps to form a settlement, and they boldly told him that they did not intend to remain any longer on that coast.

This being the case, Cabot had no discretion but to take them all on board again. But he was not ready to return to England. He decided that as long as nothing could be accomplished by sailing to the northward, he would try the other end of the coast; and put his ships to explore south of where he had landed.

He explored the coast as far south as the thirty-eighth parallel; and then set sail for England. What had he accomplished? No passage had been found, for his sailors had compelled him to turn back when they reached the Arctic Circle; no colony had been established, for those who had undertaken to found the settlement had refused to remain. The one thing which gives distinction to this voyage is the fact that, during its course, Cabot explored the eastern coast of North America for one thousand eight hundred miles, measured as the crow flies.

But this achievement, then unparalleled, did not satisfy the King. Good money had been paid out of the royal purse, to assist in fitting out this expedition; and nothing had been brought back. There was not even a settlement established, as a promise of future trade. Could this be reckoned as service to the Crown? Did a man who did no more than spend the King's money expect to be received with honors? Certainly not. Besides, the second patent had not been worded like the first. The first, as we have above quoted it, named John Cabot, his three sons, and their heirs or deputies, to enter on this work of discovery; the second had named simply John Cabot and his deputies. Clearly, reasoned the King and those who wished to stand well with him, since John Cabot had died before the expedition set out, Se-

bastian had undertaken more than he was entitled to attempt, when he took command in his father's place, without being formally appointed by the King.

Of such a quibble the King of England availed himself, to avoid rewarding Cabot for what he had done, and to rescind the privileges of the first patent, in which the names of John Cabot's three sons appeared with that of the father. This was a more flagrant injustice than any with which Columbus ever met; for Ferdinand of Arragon, while he might intend to cheat the discoverer of his rewards, never openly acknowledged such an intention; he contented himself with putting off the Admiral's claims from time to time, always promising justice for the future; Henry VII., less deceitful, but fully as unjust, bluntly refused to reward Cabot for his discoveries.

Yet in 1499 we find him again asking royal assistance in fitting out a fleet. Perhaps he could not realize the depth of meanness of which the King could be capable. He met, however, with "noe great or favourable entertainment," and is supposed to have fitted out the vessels from his own means, lessened as they were by the expenses of the previous expeditions.

On this voyage, we are told, he made great discoveries; but what they were worthy Master Eden does not think it worth while to say; perhaps he was not altogether sure himself, but put in one general assertion what was usually believed. Beyond this mention of a third voyage, we know nothing more of him until 1512.

We then find him at Seville, in the employment of the Spanish Government. What position he occupied is uncertain; he was probably high in the naval service, under the general direction of Vespuccius, who, however, was drawing near the close of his life. The abilities of Cabot were not recognized by the Spanish monarch until there seemed danger of his enriching some other country with the results of his daring and his labors.

Henry VII., had died in 1509, leaving a treasure of two millions sterling to his son and successor, Henry VIII., a boy of eighteen. This sum, which is now far exceeded by the fortune of several railway magnates of the United States, was then regarded as an unparalleled amount of money; and to the young King it seemed inexhaustible. For a time he seemed bent on no discovery but one; he desired to find if his father's long purse had any bottom. Gradually, however, as the various excitements palled upon him, he began to awaken to the fact that other nations had pushed their geographical discoveries and were reaping the reward in added territory and prospects of greatly increased revenues; while England had suffered these rewards of enterprise, fairly earned by a navigator in her employ, to slip through her fingers. Cabot once more became a person of importance; perhaps of more importance than he had ever been thought before; and a messenger was dispatched to Spain to summon him to England, with a view to sending him on some new voyage of exploration and discovery.

But, by the time that Cabot arrived in his native country, the King was busily engaged with some other project; and the discussion of the exploration of the New World was postponed to suit his Majesty's convenience. Meantime Ferdinand had discovered that Cabot was a man of much ability; he was assisted to that conclusion by the danger of Cabot's taking service under Henry and adding glory to the English Crown which might just as well belong to the Spanish sovereign. He accordingly wrote to Lord Willoughby, Captain-General of England, requesting him to send Cabot back to Spain; and, as Henry VIII. was not yet ready to use his services, this was done. The discoverer returned to Spain, arriving there September 13, 1512.

This was shortly after the death of Vesputius; and King Ferdinand gave Cabot nearly the same position. He was given a liberal allowance, and for a time at least his position seems to have been a sinecure, for no duties were assigned to him. In 1515, however, he was engaged in making, under royal patronage, a general revision of maps and charts—a work requiring much skill and accurate knowledge. His assistants included the best cosmographers of the age.

The same year he was chosen a member of the Council for the Indies—an unusually high honor for a foreigner not yet forty years of age. But this was not all; Ferdinand seemed to delight in heaping honors upon the man whose services had been disregarded by England; and, having determined on an expedition to sail the next year in search of the Indian Passage—for it was fully known by this time that Columbus had *not* discovered the eastern coast of Asia—he placed Cabot at the head of it.

Preparations went rapidly forward, and at the beginning of the year 1516 Cabot's lucky star seemed to be in the ascendant. In the very prime of life and strength, the favorite of a great monarch whose chief ambition was one that a man of Cabot's abilities and training could advance better than any one else could, taken from a post of great honor to be placed in one that satisfied every dream of his boyhood and manhood, what more could any one hope for, or wish for? It was literally too good to be true; for before the end of January, Ferdinand died, and, with him, the expedition for seeking the Northwest Passage to China.

His successor was the Emperor Charles V., who was then in Brussels; and it was sometime before the new King came to Spain. In the meantime all was confusion there, every one seeking to do what he imagined would best recommend him to the favor of the young sovereign; for Charles was but sixteen years old. The Spaniards, by means of one of his ministers, could get some access to him, and many of them employed this opportunity in blackening the characters and talking against the projects of their enemies. Cabot was one of those who were thus intrigued against. The favorite of a monarch is always an object of jealousy; and it would seem that Cabot had

suddenly been raised to this much envied, but really unenviable, position, from one of comparative obscurity. Added to this was all the national hatred of a foreigner. The Spaniards who endeavored to influence Charles V. against Cabot called him a foreign impostor, denied that his early voyages had accomplished anything, and even insinuated that he had not really reached land, as he claimed. All this was not without effect upon the boy-ruler; and Cabot, who seems to have foreseen this state of affairs, returned to England almost as soon as Charles reached Spain.

He was well received here, for Henry saw the mistake that he had made in allowing him to depart; fortunately for England, the death of Ferdinand had prevented Cabot from accomplishing any great service to Spain, and had sent him back ready to serve his native country. The explorer at once set about preparing a number of vessels for a new voyage, being determined to undertake on his own account that which Ferdinand had been about to do for Spain. The King of England took an active interest in the fitting out of the expedition, and furnished not only "certen shippes," but some money, and appointed Sir Thomas Perte as Cabot's second in command.

This expedition sailed from England in 1517; bound, according to some authorities, on a trading voyage to the Spanish settlements in the West Indies. It is more probable, however, that these writers have confused this with a later voyage, and that Cabot was now once again in search of the Northwest Passage.

Accounts of the course pursued are considerably confused, and in the absence of any record from Cabot's hand will never be exactly determined. We find them at one time off the coast of Labrador; at another, off the coast of Florida. Most likely they sailed up and down the coasts of what are now Canada and the United States, seeking for some opening which would permit them to pass to the Pacific. This was no wild project, according to the belief of the times; and, at a later day, the settlers on the Atlantic seaboard thought they had but to cross the Alleghanies to view the Pacific.

They penetrated to the sixty-seventh degree of north latitude, and on this third voyage to the coast of North America certainly entered Hudson's Bay, giving English names to many a prominent point. But again the crew, wearied by the long voyage, suffering from privations and from the severity of the climate, insisted upon returning to England. They asserted that there was no Northwest Passage to be found; or at least that Cabot did not know where to look for it; and open mutiny was imminent.

In such a case as this Cabot should have been able to rely upon his officers: the one who stood next to him should have been particularly trustworthy; but this was the very one who failed him. Obedient to the leader, the pilots tried to convince the crews that the passage certainly existed, and that it must be found near where they then were; the sailors refused to listen to

their arguments; and Sir Thomas Perte justified them openly for so acting.

On a modern vessel, Perte would have been punished along with the other mutineers; but not so at the time of which we write. Discipline, as we understand it, was then a thing unheard of; standing armies and organized naval forces were unknown; class distinctions there were, of the broadest kind; but of official authority there was very little, especially in a wilderness three thousand miles away from the center of government. Cabot could not proceed against his lieutenant, for Perte was appointed by royal authority; and probably possessed influence enough to have ruined Cabot, had he been humiliated by him. The commander, then, whose orders were thus defied, made the best of it, and put his ships about for home.

On their return, Cabot was generally commended for the resolution which he had shown; while a contemporary writer says of Perte: "His faint heart was the cause that the voyage took none effect." But although the blame for the failure was thus justly placed, it did not alter the fact that it was a failure. The King was busy with other things, and did not choose to turn his attention to the projects of a man who had made three voyages and not found the Northwest Passage yet. Besides this indifference of the Government, the people had no heart for such enterprises. A terrible plague had desolated the country while Cabot had been away, and they had not yet recovered their energy and resolution.

Fortunately for him, however, the affairs of Spain were in a more promising condition; and there was a prospect of better things there. When Charles V. came to examine into matters, he was surprised to find that Cabot had disappeared. He knew something of the estimation in which his grandfather had held this Englishman; he knew the jealous and intriguing character of the Spaniards, and he saw that the state records bore witness to his faithfulness and services. Anxious to atone for past injustice, Charles seems to have sent for Cabot as soon as he returned from the New World. He was well received at court, and in 1518 appointed to the high office of Pilot-Major of Spain. His duties were now numerous and responsible; and for some time we find no more expeditions to the West; he had enough to occupy him at home.

But the fever of discovery could not long be repressed, when it had reached such heights as it had in the annals of Spain. A vast treasure-house of the natives had been opened in America by an intrepid Spaniard; it was in a tropical climate; all southern lands might yield just such riches; and Spain must prosecute her discoveries in the southern hemisphere. "To the South, to the South!" exclaims one of the historians of Spanish America; "they that seek for riches must not go to the cold and frozen North!"

The Molucca Islands had long been regarded as the source of much wealth; chiefly, perhaps, because of the spice which was there produced. Cabot,

following the lead of popular opinion, or perhaps directing it, advised that an expedition should be fitted out to visit the Moluccas, the route chosen being by way of the Straits of Magellan, then but recently discovered. But as soon as this proposition got wind, the Portuguese Government was up in arms. The Molucca Islands belonged to Portugal, being included in that portion of the earth which had been assigned to that country by the Pope, when the undiscovered countries of the globe were virtually divided by papal authority between Spain and Portugal.

Of course, Spain was not ready to allow this claim, and it was finally agreed to submit the question to a council of learned navigators and cosmographers, to meet at Badajoz in 1524. Cabot's name heads the list of those who were summoned to this conference, showing in what high esteem he was held. The council met in April, and deliberated for more than a month. The decision, which was rendered the last of May, was to the effect that the islands in dispute lay twenty degrees within the line which bounded the Spanish dominions.

The Portuguese envoys were furious at this reversal of their claims, and retired, uttering many a threat of maintaining their rights by force of arms. These threats we leave unheeded for the present, following more closely the actions and fortunes of Cabot.

A company was at once formed for the prosecution of trade with the Moluccas, and of this Cabot, with the permission of the Council of the Indies, accepted the chief office. He received the title of Captain-General. Three ships and one hundred and fifty men were to be provided by the Emperor, who was to receive, out of the profits, a certain share, not less than four thousand ducats. The company was to supply all funds necessary for trading, and Cabot was obliged to give bond for the faithful performance of his duty.

The Portuguese found that their threats produced no effect whatever upon the young Emperor, so they resorted to other tactics. A remonstrance was made in due form, whereby they showed that an invasion of the Portuguese monopoly in trade with the East Indies would be the ruin of the country; and that the relationship between them, and the ties of marriage—for the King of Portugal had married the Emperor's sister—ought to prevent Charles from undertaking anything which would ruin his cousin and brother-in-law. The Emperor replied that he could not relinquish, for any such considerations, an enterprise which it was his right to pursue.

Threats and remonstrances being alike useless, the King of Portugal resolved to try still other means, and fitted out a squadron of three vessels, which he placed under the command of Diego Garcia, and intended especially to harass the Spaniards under Cabot.

Meantime, there was considerable delay in preparing the fleet, which the articles of agreement had arranged should sail in August, 1525. Naturally

enough, Cabot desired to appoint his own chief lieutenant, and nominated a trustworthy friend of his to that high office. The other officers of the Company, who constituted the board of managers, objected to this, and insisted upon the appointment of Martin Mendez, who had sailed under Magellan. It is quite possible that Cabot was unjustly prejudiced against this man, and that his opposition to his appointment was unreasonable; but in an expedition like this there should have been perfect concord between the chief officers; Cabot had seen one expedition, of which he was the leader, fail, because he had not been upheld by the second in command; and now the most that he could hope from a lieutenant appointed against his protest was that his orders would not be openly opposed. There could be no real agreement between them.

As if to strengthen the party of Mendez—for parties there must be under such circumstances—two brothers, Miguel and Francisco de Rojas, devoted followers of Mendez, were attached to the expedition; one of them being commander of one of the ships.

Finally, as if to make Cabot's position as dangerous as possible, without openly setting a price upon his head; sealed orders were furnished to the captain of each ship, with instructions that they should not be opened until they were fairly at sea. In these orders, eleven persons were named, upon whom, in order of succession, the command should devolve in case of Cabot's death. If all these should die, the leader must be chosen by the general vote; providing, that if there should be a tie, the candidates receiving the highest number of votes should cast lots.

It is doubtful whether Cabot knew what instructions were given until the orders were opened at sea. If he did, there is only one consideration that can excuse him for sailing under such conditions; he had contended in so many instances with the agents of the Company—for his judgment was almost invariably different from theirs—that he was unwilling to attempt to resist this last assertion of their authority, and trusted to his own resolution to prevail over their arts.

Outwardly, the course of the expedition seemed to be favored by fortune for a long time after setting out. They touched at the Canaries and the Cape Verde Islands, both belonging to Portugal; but their intercourse with the islanders was as friendly as if perfect concord had existed between the rulers of the two nations. Their object was probably to complete the victualling of the ships; and from the Cape Verde Islands, when this had been accomplished, they struck boldly across the Atlantic, Cape St. Augustine being their next stopping-place.

But beneath this show of peace rebellion was constantly seething. Disputes had arisen between some of the sailors before leaving Seville, and Mendez and the Rojas began to complain that Cabot did nothing to allay

them. It was said by them that the commander had laid in no sufficient stock of provisions for so long a voyage, and that they were bound to starve before they reached their destination; when this was doubted by some who were too well-informed to accept it, the conspirators acknowledged that there might be enough provided, but that the greater part of the stores had been placed on Cabot's own ship, where it could not be reached by those on the other vessels. The men were urged to depose a tyrant, and put true men in his place.

There never was a man who had been accustomed to command who was less a tyrant than Sebastian Cabot. Those of his companions whose testimony has come down to us have spoken of him with sincere affection; many things show the gentleness of his character; and there are but few instances recorded where he exercised any severity.

But those who are determined to find fault with the proceedings of any one can generally find something on which to base their complaints; and in all considerable bodies of men there will be discovered some who are not satisfied with the rule of those in authority. Mendez and his confederates worked upon the dislike of those who had been justly punished by Cabot, or who had failed to receive from him what they considered was their due. These, in turn, influenced others, and at length the plans of revolt were fully matured.

All this was underhand work; it was not until they had sighted Cape St. Augustine, and were coasting southwardly along the shores of Brazil, that their criticisms of every order issued by Cabot became openly insolent. Should it come to formal rebellion, Cabot did not know on whom he could rely; for there were but two Englishmen in all the crews, and every Spaniard might be an enemy.

At every turn he saw lowering countenances, and heard hints of the undeserved favor which had raised him, a mere foreign adventurer, to a place which rightfully belonged to a Spaniard. He paid no attention to all this, until he was ready to act. Then, with that sharp decision which sometimes marks the mildest and gentlest character, making no attempt to argue the case or to effect a compromise, he ordered Mendez and the two Rojas brothers to be seized. The sudden and unexpected orders were obeyed, Francisco de Rojas being taken without ceremony from the vessel which he commanded. When they had been brought before the commander, he ordered two seamen, of whose faithfulness he was well assured—probably those two countrymen of his—to enter an open boat with the culprits, and put them ashore at the nearest island. He was obeyed without question, and the ships sailed on without the three men who were next in command to Cabot.

The subordinates in the plot, awed by this severe treatment of the ring-leaders, cleared the sullen frowns from their faces, and paid such respect as

they knew how to give to the energetic leader. But the loss of these officers, Cabot considered, made such a change in the personnel of the expedition as to defeat any plans which the Company might have entertained, of directing the course in accordance with the views of all the high officers; he was unwilling to take the sole responsibility of prosecuting the original enterprise. He accordingly decided to put into the mouth of the Rio de la Plata for a time, and there consider what course should be taken. Perhaps he had some idea of sending back for the mutinous officers, or at least of affording them an opportunity of rejoining the vessels.

Just before reaching this point, however, he lost one of his vessels, it being wrecked in a storm which the others barely escaped. This left but two; and he decided that it would not be well, without more ships, to attempt the crossing of the great South Sea.

He therefore turned his attention to the exploration of the country about La Plata. He had been preceded in the office of Pilot-Major by Don Diego de Solis, who had come on a voyage of discovery and exploration to this very spot. Landing at the mouth of La Plata with a body of fifty men, Solis had been attacked by a large band of savages; many of his men were slain; the others were captured; and the cannibal victors feasted on the bodies of those whom they had slain in battle and of the prisoners whom they had put to death afterward.

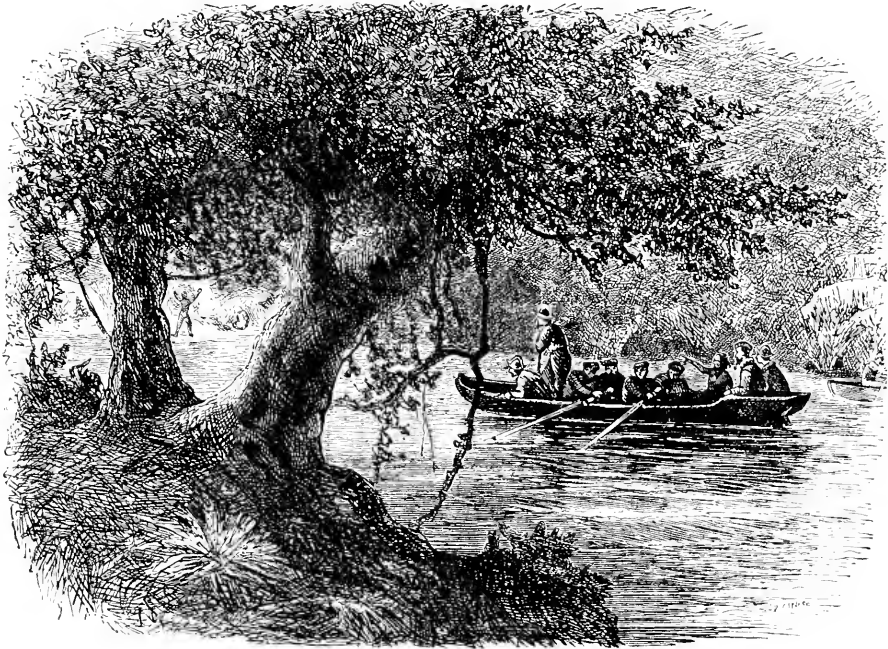
The vessel under the command of Solis, from the deck of which the remnant of his force witnessed these horrible proceedings, without the power of avenging their comrades, returned to Spain with the account of that tragedy. The same man who had acted as pilot to Solis held a similar position on board the vessel of Cabot; and thus to these newcomers the scenes of their predecessors' melancholy fate was pointed out by one who had been an eye-witness.

Just off that point where the city of Buenos Ayres is now situated, lies a small island, called San Gabriel; and here Cabot decided to land. Their purpose was stubbornly resisted by a considerable body of natives; but the Spaniards were equally determined, and finally drove off the savages. A suitable place being found for anchoring the ships, Cabot, with most of his crew, proceeded in open boats on a voyage of discovery up the river.

They journeyed something over twenty miles in this manner, before they decided to land. They were then at the head of that wide estuary which we are accustomed to call the Rio de la Plata, at the mouth of the Parana, and nearly opposite the mouth of the Uruguay. They were near an island which Cabot called San Salvador, and it was on this that they proposed to land.

But their progress up the river had been jealously watched by savages, half hidden among the trees that clothed the shores of the stream; and when these enemies saw that the newcomers were preparing to land, they concen-

trated their forces instantly, and sent a storm of arrows, from every direction upon them. Two of the Spaniards were killed, and the others were glad to retreat to their boats. The natives obtained possession of the bodies of the slain, but declared to the Spaniards that they did not mean to eat them; the flesh of Solis and his tough soldier followers had been enough.



VOYAGING UP THE RIVER.

Finding that the island of San Salvador was furnished with an excellent harbor, Cabot dropped down stream to his ships, and caused them to ascend to the safer and more retired anchorage which he had just found. Leaving them there, under the command of Antonio de Grajeda, with a small guard, he prepared a caravel and several smaller boats for an ascent of the Parana.

He found the people living on the banks of this river much less hostile than those on the sea-coast, and made friends with many of them. Notwithstanding this, he built a fort, some miles above the mouth of the Parana, which he named Sanctus Spiritus. Continuing the ascent from this point, his little force, considerably lessened by the frequent deaths which had occurred, became discontented; and it was all that he could do to hold them to his purpose. It was his idea that if this river were ascended far enough, it would lead him either to the rich silver mines of Potosi or by a new passage to the Pacific. The country through which they traveled is described as "very fayre and inhabited with infinite people."

When they reached the point at which the Parana receives the waters of the Paraguay, the explorers did not continue to follow the main stream, which here changes its course entirely, but kept straight on up the Paraguay. They found the inhabitants more highly civilized than any they had yet met; they were industrious tillers of the soil, which they cultivated to advantage; and they seemed to have a clear idea of each other's rights; but they were bitterly opposed to the invasion of their country by any foreigners; and seemed to entertain a particular hatred to the Spaniards and Portuguese.

Seeing that this was the condition of affairs, Cabot exercised great care to prevent a conflict between his followers and the natives; but care was to be rendered ineffectual. Three of the Spaniards left the boats one day, to gather the fruit of the palm-trees which hung in tempting profusion almost over the water. They were set upon by a considerable party of the natives; and being taken by surprise, and greatly outnumbered, were easily captured.

The fiery Spaniards were determined to revenge themselves on the Indians for having thus captured their comrades; and Cabot at once became a military commander. What disposition was made of his small force we do not know; but he was ably seconded in his efforts by the hardy courage of his men, who were burning to fight with the captors of their friends; and who were so accustomed by their profession to hardships that they scarcely regarded the dangers which they must now face. Ignorant of the country and mode of warfare practiced by their enemies, they fought with desperation.

The conflict lasted for the greater part of a day; and the slaughter was something terrible. Twenty-five white men and more than three hundred Indians fell before the dusky foe could be driven from the banks of the river. At last, however, as night fell, the whites saw that their valor had won the day; the enemy had retreated, leaving them in possession of the river which had been the field of battle.

Cabot at once dispatched a messenger to the commander of Fort Sanctus Spiritus, giving an account of the battle and a record of the men whom he had lost, together with an estimate of the enemy's loss. It was a severe blow to him; for not only was his force materially weakened by the death of so many men, but the spirits of the survivors were unfavorably affected. He had had considerable difficulty in keeping them to his purpose thus far; he had been obliged to hold out before them, constantly, the prospects of enormous wealth, to be acquired when they should reach the silver mines of Potosi; but now, when they had come so many miles, and had seen so many of their comrades slain before their eyes, and had no assurance that other hostile hordes of natives did not await their coming along the whole route to the mines, they felt their courage and desire for wealth vanishing together. Such was the condition of affairs when the sailors received a support, unexpected equally by themselves and by their commander.

In order to understand what this support was, we must return for a little while to the fort at Sanctus Spiritus, where the messenger with the news of the battle had just arrived. Scarcely had Cabot's letter been delivered to Grajeda, when a party was seen coming up La Plata. With his mind full of the misfortune which had already happened, and dreading worse things to come, Grajeda hastily concluded that the mutinous officers had escaped from their lonely island by the aid of some passing vessel, and had, by their false representations, secured the sympathy and assistance of its commander and crew. But it was another enemy than Mendez.

We have seen, some pages back, that the Portuguese envoys to the conference at Badajos were furious when that convocation of learned geographers and map-drawers decided that the Molucca Islands were within the meridian that bounded Spanish possessions. They uttered many a savage threat, which were all disregarded by the triumphant Spaniards. Even if any danger had been anticipated from them, all fears were allayed when the King of Portugal sought to obtain, by remonstrance with the Emperor, that which it had been decided did not belong to him of right. But when this had failed, then the threats, considered as empty and idle by the Spaniards, were put into execution; and three ships were secretly prepared to embarrass Cabot's movements. The command of this squadron was placed in the hands of Diego Garcia.

Garcia sailed in 1526, following Cabot's track very closely, to the Canaries, the Cape Verde Islands, and the coast of Brazil. Along this coast he seems confidently to have expected to come up with the Spanish expedition, and entered all the considerable indentations in search of the vessels. Entering La Plata, he ascended the river; and it was he whom Grajeda supposed to be Mendez.

The newcomer was somewhat surprised to be met by several armed boats, led by Grajeda in person. At first, he was inclined to allow Grajeda to believe that he was a commander who had taken up the cause of Mendez and the Rojas; but finding that Grajeda was determined to do battle with such a person, acknowledged that he was the leader of a Portuguese fleet; and peace was established between the two.

Garcia had allowed one of his vessels to engage in the slave trade; and this, laden heavily with its human chattels, he ordered to return home; while the others, manned by desperate, resolute men, he caused to anchor in the harbor of San Salvador.

Leaving his ships and a part of the crews there, Garcia manned two brigantines with sixty men, and ascended the river, still on Cabot's track. He landed at the fort called Sanctus Spiritus, where Gregorio Caro had been placed in command of the small garrison; and summoned him to surrender.

"Although ready to serve my guest in every possible way," was the very

polite answer, "I shall continue to hold command of the Fort Sanctus Spiritus in the name of Senor Cabota and his master and mine, the most gracious Emperor."

Whether Caro fully understood that Garcia was indeed demanding a surrender, he kept possession of the fort, as he said that he would, and managed to be on good terms with the Portuguese. Perhaps they admired his courtesy in unfavorable circumstances too much to use any impolite methods, such as would have been necessary in attacking the fort; more probably, Garcia smiled contemptuously at the answer, and decided that it was not worth while to assault a fort commanded by such a man.

Caro seems to have been wholly in the dark as to the character and intentions of the newcomers; for he asked, as a favor, that Garcia would liberate any of Cabot's party who might have fallen into the hands of the natives: binding himself to repay faithfully whatever Garcia might have to pay as ransom for such persons; and finally begged that he would befriend the followers of Cabot, should they, in any battle occurring after that of which he had received news, have lost their commander.

Arrived at the point where the city of Corrientes is now situated, Garcia seems to have been in doubt what course to pursue. According to what he had learned from Caro, Cabot had followed the river which came from a northerly direction; but the Parana was so evidently the main stream, that for some distance he followed that, believing that Caro must have mistaken the course pursued, or perhaps been misled by Cabot. But he soon learned that Caro's information was correct, and, returning to the junction of the rivers, ascended the Paraguay.

Cabot's force was still stationed at the point where the battle had taken place; for there were some who had been wounded in the fight whom it was judged best not to move until their injuries should be partly cured. We cannot suppose that the meeting was marked with very much friendliness on either side; but there were no open hostilities. Garcia, however, remarked the weakness of Cabot's force, lessened as it was by death, and rendered unavailable by wounds and fatigue. He demanded that Cabot should surrender at once to him; basing his demands on the fact that Brazil, having been discovered by a subject of Portugal, belonged to that country; and at that time, the name of Brazil was applied to almost the whole coast of South America.

Cabot steadily resisted this demand; but knew that he had not force sufficient to defy the arrogant subject of Portugal. He therefore put him off as best he could; probably with a promise to refer the whole matter to Europe for decision, and the united force returned to Sanctus Spiritus.

Garcia, having stationed a considerable body of his followers here and at San Salvador, set sail at once. Cabot, convinced that he had gone to Europe to make as much mischief as possible, and fearing that he would circulate,

even in Spain, reports which would be injurious to him, resolved to send messengers at once, to lay the true state of affairs before the Emperor. They were to inform the sovereign of the treatment which had been accorded to the mutinous officers, of the changes of destination and the reasons for making such a change, and of the particulars of the ascent of the river. Francis Calderon and George Barlow were chosen as the messengers; their report is still in existence among the archives of Spain.

Cabot defended his change of destination, not only by the necessity of the case, but by the claim that he expected from this route fully as much gain as if he had pursued that originally marked out. He had found, on the banks of La Plata, many natives wearing ornaments of gold and silver; and, making friends with them, "he came to learn many secrets of the country." One of these secrets was the intelligence of the route to the rich silver mines of the interior; and he hoped to secure enough treasure there to repay the generosity of the Emperor, and enrich all those who had taken part in the expedition.

He remained at the fort, awaiting the result of his application for provision, ammunition, goods for trading with the natives, and a larger force of soldiers and seamen, all of which would be necessary for the prosecution of the enterprise.

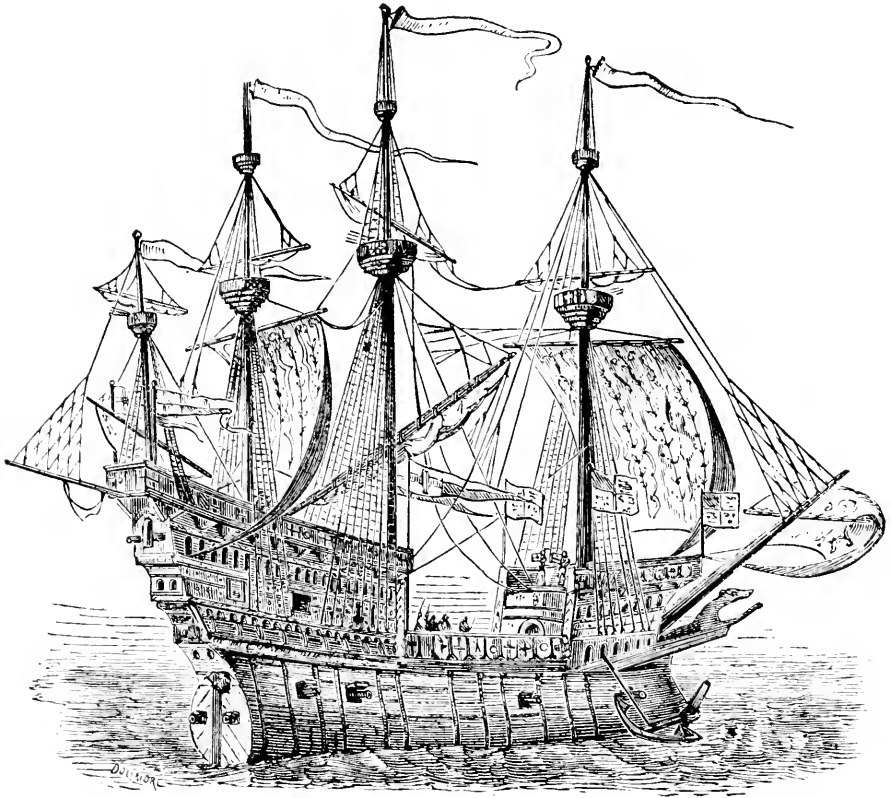
Whatever Garcia might have done, or tried to do, he had certainly not succeeded in poisoning the mind of the Emperor toward Cabot; for the envoys of the Pilot-Major found the monarch most favorably disposed when they laid their leader's requests before him. The Company, on the other hand, thought Cabot demanded too much, and decided to allow their rights in the matter to pass to the Crown. Charles V. willingly accepted the surrender, and promised to be personally responsible for the enterprise.

But he was carrying on a war with his neighbor, the King of France; and wars are expensive luxuries. His soldiers were clamoring for their pay, and, being mercenaries, threatened to desert his standard if they did not receive it; the Moluccas had been mortgaged, and the Cortes, the Spanish parliament, refused to raise any more money by taxes. Under such circumstances, Charles, however willing he might be to assist Cabot, was unable to do so.

Besides, just at this time, a more flattering offer than that of Cabot's had been made to the Emperor. Pizarro had offered to equip an expedition, at his own expense, for the reduction of Peru, and promised to resign all conquests to the Crown. The entire and exclusive range of the coasts of Peru was granted to him; and the promises which the Emperor had made when Cabot's messengers first applied to him were set aside, never to be fulfilled.

Meanwhile, Cabot was awaiting their return very anxiously, at his lonely post in the New World. But he was not idle; that would have been a certain means of inviting mutiny and dissatisfaction among his men. He employed

his time and theirs in making short excursions about the forts, until the whole neighborhood of the river had been thoroughly explored. He employed them in close observations of the products of the country; so that when they were thrown upon their own resources for the means of obtaining food—for no supplies came from Spain—they were not altogether helpless. Often but one or two were left in charge of the ship, while the others penetrated far into the interior, depending upon their tents or the huts of some friendly natives for shelter by night.



GREAT SHIP OF HENRY THE EIGHTH.

Cabot's men seem by this time to have given up the idea of returning to their own country, which is always the first wish of dissatisfied wanderers; and were only anxious to penetrate to that rich country which was to afford such an ample reward for all the labors and dangers which had beset them since they left Spain. It was with no small difficulty that he held them in check until he should learn the pleasure of the Emperor; and the delay was as distasteful to him as it was to them.

While they were thus engaged in exploring, observing, and cementing friendly treaties with the natives, the men whom Garcia had left were bringing misfortune upon themselves and the Spaniards on whom they were quartered. They had many disputes with the natives, until the patience of the Indians was quite worn out. At last the crisis came. A more bitter disagreement than usual so enraged the savages that they swore to take vengeance for what they had suffered at the hands of Garcia's men; and, in order that not one guilty man should escape, they vowed to destroy every one of the whites. They had entered into a treaty of peace with Cabot; but they did not understand the difference of nationality; and they considered that he must be, after all, responsible for the actions of all white men at the forts. They considered him a traitor to the treaty, and resolved to act accordingly.

Their plans were carefully laid, and warriors from a number of different tribes were secretly assembled. One morning before day-break they stormed Fort Sanctus Spiritus. The surprise was complete; the inmates were hardly awake before the savages were in possession of the stronghold; and the victors marched against the fort at San Salvador.

Here, however, the garrison was more on the alert, warned by the fate of their comrades farther up the river. They held the enemy at bay until the commander could have his one large ship prepared to receive the remnant of his forces; the others, caravel and brigantines, must be left behind. All the available stores were put on board, and the reduced force embarked, driven from America by a tribe of enraged natives. They arrived in Spain, 1531, after an absence of five years.

Authorities differ as to the reception with which Cabot met; some declaring that it was entirely satisfactory, others saying that he met with coldness and ill-nature. Perhaps both are, in some degree, true; he was probably received with reproaches by the merchants whose hopes he had disappointed, and with kindness by the Emperor who had always entertained respect for him, and who never lost that feeling.

There was some inclination, among the Spaniards in general, to blame Cabot for the treatment which Mendez and his two confederates had received at his hands; but Cabot had so united the sailors and soldiers to him by his course at La Plata, and had shown his admirable character so clearly there, that there was nothing to be said against him in their presence; while his large-minded admiration of Columbus, and perfect freedom from jealousy of that great navigator, made him many friends; for the Spaniards had outgrown, in the years since the death of the Admiral of the Indies, all narrow jealousies, and had exalted him to the place of a national hero. Cabot did not hesitate to declare the exploits of Columbus to have been "more divine than human," and was respected accordingly.

Cabot resumed the office of Pilot-Major, which he continued to fill for some

years, giving general satisfaction, and respected as the first navigator of the age. In Hakluyt's voyages is quoted the opinion of a gentleman who had asked for some information on matters relating to the sea, and was referred to the Pilot-Major; and this quotation we here reproduce:—

“It was tolde mee that there was in the city a valiant man, a Venetian born, named Sebastian Cabot, who had charge of the navigations of the Spaniards, being an expert man in that science, and one that could make cardes [charts] for the sea with his owne hand, and by this report, seeking his acquaintance, I found him a very gentle and courteous person, who entertained mee friendly, and shewed mee many things, and among other a large mappe of the world, with certaine particuler navigations, as well of the Portugals as of the Spaniards, and he spake further unto me to this effect.”

Another contemporary says of him:—

“He is so valiant a man, and so well practised in all things pertaining to navigations, and the science of cosmographie, that at this present he hath not his like in all Spaine.”

While holding this office, he frequently went as chief of small naval expeditions of comparatively short extent; but nothing new, of sufficient magnitude to be here set down, was undertaken. These voyages served only to keep public interest alive; they cannot be reckoned as promoters of discovery. Cabot thus wrote of them, in a letter dated several years after:—

“After this I made many other voyages, which I now pretermit, and, waxing old, I give myself to rest from such travels, because there are now many young and lusty pilots and mariners of good experience, by whose forwardness I do rejoyce in the fruit of my labors, and rest with the charge of this office, as you see.”

For seventeen years did he “rest with the charge of this office,” content, to all appearance, so to spend the remainder of his days. But, as he passed the limit of three-score and ten, there came upon him a longing for his native land. Perhaps the fact that Henry VIII. was no longer King had something to do with it; for Cabot's patience must have been tried by the manner in which the King took up the subject of maritime enterprise, and then cast it entirely aside. This was in the youth of “bluff King Hal,” and his later years did not show even so much interest in the subject, absorbed as he was in maintaining himself and the English Church against the Pope and Luther, and given to sensual self-indulgence. He died in 1547, and was succeeded by his son, Edward VI., a mere child. From the nobles in charge of the Government Cabot expected recognition. Young as he was, the royal child had shown signs of interest in naval affairs, and knew all the ports and harbors of his own dominions, as well as those of France and Scotland. To the country ruled by such a King, the greatest of living navigators, himself a native of that country, was naturally attracted.

Resigning his high office, he returned to England in 1548. But scarcely had he left Spain before the Emperor discovered that it had been a mistake to allow him to go. A formal demand was accordingly made, that "Sebastian Cabote, Grand Pilot of the Emperor's Indies, then in England, might be sent over to Spain, as a very necessary man for the Emperor, whose servant he was, and had a pension of him." This wording would seem to imply that Cabot had tendered no formal resignation, and taken no formal leave of his patron and friends. It is not improbable, however, that the resignation was ignored on this occasion, and that permission had been given him to journey to England, before the Emperor concluded that the Grand Pilot of the Indies was "a necessary man" to him.

Although he was seventy-three or seventy-four years old at the time of his return to England, Cabot does not seem to have gone there simply to end his days in his native land; there was much good work in the old man yet; it seemed that he had found that fountain of youth which Ponce de Leon had vainly sought in the New World; and whether it was from any definite understanding that he would accept a commission under Edward VI., or whether it was merely from a general expectation that he, an Englishman, would serve the King of England when his services were required, certain it is that the ministers of the young King refused the demand of the Emperor; and Cabot received, shortly after his arrival, the appointment to an office, then first created, of Grand Pilot of England. The similarity of this title to that which he had borne in Spain gives rise to the suspicion that the office was created especially to win him from the Emperor's service, by showing him that England was ready to give him honors as great as Spain had offered him. At the same time, a patent was issued, granting "our beloved servant, Sebastian Cabota," an annual pension of one hundred and sixty-six pounds, thirteen shillings and four pence, to be paid quarterly. If we accept the calculation of Irving, that money was then worth about three times as much as at the present day, this was equivalent to two thousand five hundred dollars per year of United States money.

The title being given, and the salary attaching to the office fixed, it remains to ascertain the duties. But this is a matter of more difficulty. On one occasion, according to the records, a French pilot, who had made eighteen voyages to the coast of Brazil, relating his experiences to Sir John Yorke, "before Sebastian Cabote," which seems to imply that it was his business to ascertain all that had been accomplished by the discoverers and explorers of the different nations, and perhaps to combine the information so obtained in the form of charts, for the guidance of future expeditions.

It was during this period of honored repose—for his duties could not have been very exacting—that Cabot, for the first time in his long and busy life, found time to elaborate a theory which had occurred to him while still a very

young man. During his first voyage to the west, he had noticed, as Columbus and all following navigators have noticed, the variation of the magnetic needle. We know now that the magnetic pole, to which the needle points, is at some distance from the astronomical pole of the earth, and, consequently, that the compass may sometimes point in a different direction from due



SEBASTIAN CABOT AND THE COSMOGRAPHERS.

north. But this was not dreamed of in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries; and many of the most eminent navigators of the day puzzled their brains in vain to find a solution of the difficulty. Cabot had noted the fact as a youth of twenty; and after the lapse of more than fifty years he had not found an explanation.

Deacidified using the Bookkeeper process.
Neutralizing Agent: Magnesium Oxide
Treatment Date:



PRESERVATION TECHNOLOGIES, INC.
111 Thomson Park Drive
Cranberry Twp., PA 16066
(412) 779-2111



FC 16



N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962

LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 010 524 495 2